



ε<sup>0b801</sup>



**ENGLISH-RUSSIAN**

**G R A M M' A R**



# ENGLISH-RUSSIAN

## GRAMMAR

OR

## PRINCIPLES

OF THE

## RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

WITH SYNOPTICAL TABLES FOR THE DECLENSIONS AND CONJUGATIONS,  
GRADUATED THEMES OR EXERCISES FOR THE APPLICATION OF THE  
GRAMMATICAL RULES, THE CORRECT CONSTRUCTION OF THESE  
EXERCISES AND THE ACCENTUATION OF ALL THE RUSSIAN WORDS

BY

CH. PH. REIFF

Fourth Edition carefully revised

WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,

14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;  
AND 20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

---

1883.

for the use of strangers. This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

*Carlsruhe, September 1862.*



PUBLISHER'S NOTE  
TO THE FOURTH EDITION

THE Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

# RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

## PART FIRST

### LEXICOLOGY.

I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division. parts, viz:

- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведéніе), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
- II. *Syntax* (словосочинéніе), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
- III. *Orthography* (правописáніе), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
- IV. *Prosody* (слогоударéніе), or *Orthoeury* (праворéчіе), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds  
or Letters.

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (буквы); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (а́збука).

Alphabet

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:

С Ѣ Ѥ Ѫ Ѧ Ѫ ѻ Ѫ

called зълб, укъ, отъ, юсь, о, я, кси, пси for which now are substituted з, у, от, ю, о, я, кс, пс.

The letter Ѫ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital Т for the common ѩ, and this Т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

FIRST PART.—*Lexicology.*

RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types,	Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.	Value.		
	Running-hand.	Round-hand.				
1. А а А а	А а	А, а ω	азъ а	а	е	ö (far)
2. Б б Б б	Б б	Б б	бўки бе	б	р	(met)
3. В в В в	В в	В в	въди ве	в	ф	(no)
4. Г г Г г	Г г	Г г	глаголь ге	г, gh	к, h, kh	v
5. Д д Д д	Д д	Д д	добрб де	д	т	
6. Е е Е е	Е е	Е е	есть е	я, я	ю, о-	(in yate, (in yoke,
7. Ж ж Ж ж	Ж ж	Ж ж	живёте же	zsh	sh	no)
8. З з З з	З з	З з	земля зе	з	з	
9. И и И и	И и	И и	иже и	е, е	и	ye (in pme)
10. І і І і	І і	І і	і (деслтерич- ное)	е, е	і	(in pme)
11. К к К к	К к	К к	како ка	к	gh, kh	
12. Л л Л л	Л л	Л л	люди эль	л, ll		
13. М м М м	М м	М м	мыслёте эмъ	м		
14. Н н Н н	Н н	Н н	нашъ энъ	н		
15. О о О о	О о	О о	онъ е	о	ø	(in far)
16. П п П п	П п	П п	покой пе	р		
17. Р р Р р	Р р	Р р	рцы эръ	т		
18. С с С с	С с	С с	слово асъ.	с, ss		z

Types.	Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.
	roman. italic.	Round-hand.	Running-hand.	ancient. modern.	Proper Accidental sound. sound.
19. Т т Т т	Том	Т	т	твёрдо те	t    t
20. У у У у	Уу	У	у	у    у	oo, u (in tub)
21. Ф ф Ф ф	Фф	Ф	ф	ферть эфъ	f, ph
22. Х х Х х	Хх	Х	х	хвръ ха	kh, h
23. Ц ц Ц ц	Цу	Ц	ц	цы    це	ts
24. Ч ч Ч ч	Че	Ч	ч	червъ че	ch, tsh sh
25. Ш ш Ш ш	Шш	Ш	ш	ша	sh
26. Щ щ Щ щ	Щщ	Щ	щ	ща	sh-tsh sh
27. Ъ ъ Ъ ъ	Ъ	ъ	ъ	ъръ	e mute
28. Ы ы Ы ы	Ыы	Ы	ы	ыръ	e thick we
29. Ъ ь Ъ ь	Ъ	ъ	ь	ъръ	у mute
30. Ь ь Ь ь	Ь	ь	ь	ять	yah, á yo
31. Э э Э э	Э	Э	э	э	e (in met.)
32. Ю ю Ю ю	Юю	Ю	ю	ю	you    u Fr.
33. Я я Я я	Яя	Я	я	я	ya    ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met.)
34. Ө ө Ө ө	Ө	Ө	ө	өйтá	f
35. Ү ү Ү ү	Үү	Ү	ү	үйнца	ee, i (in pu)
36. Ы ӵ Ы ӵ	ӵӵ	ӵ	ӵ	и съкраткой	у mute

## RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А А а	И И и	О О о	У У у
Б Б б	Н Н н	Э Э э	Ы Ы ѫ
В В в	О О о	҃҃ ҃	҃ ҃ ҃
Г Г г	Н Н н	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
Д Д д	Р Р р	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
Е Е е	С С с	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
Ж Ж ж	М М м	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
З З з	У У у	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
Ч Ч ч	Ф Ф ф	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
҃ ҃	Х Х х	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
҃ ҃	Ч Ч ч	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
҃ ҃	Ч Ч ч	҃ ҃	҃ ҃
҃ ҃	Ч Ч ч	҃ ҃	҃ ҃

---

Язык Русский, будучи управляемый  
человеческим умом, может  
иметь равненства и симметрию  
и пристрастии от лучших из выражений  
древности и наших времен.

Division of  
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (глásные), viz: а, е, и, о, у, ы, ъ, э, ю, я, ү, of which the following five: е, ъ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (двуглásные); 3 *semi-vowels* (пóдглásные): ъ, ы, and 21 *consonants* (соглásные), viz: ё, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ч, ш, щ, ё.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
1. Hard: { and those cor- responding }	2. Soft: { and those cor- responding }	1. Strong: { and those cor- responding }	2. Feeble:
а . . . . .	я . . . . .	п . . . . .	б . . . . .
ә . . . . .	е . . . . .	ф . . . . .	в . . . . .
ы . . . . .	ы, і . . . . .	к . . . . .	г (g lat.) . . . . .
ö . . . . .	ö (lo) . . . . .	х . . . . .	г (h lat.) . . . . .
ү . . . . .	ю . . . . .	ш . . . . .	ж . . . . .
3. Moderate:		T . . . . .	
B.		С . . . . .	
II. SEMI-VOWELS.			
1. Hard: { and those cor- responding }	2. Soft: { and those cor- responding }	Ц (TC) . . (ДЗ	These three Ч (ТИ) . . (ДЖ
ъ . . . . .	ъ . . . . .	Щ (ШТИ) (ЖДЖ)	have no sign of their own.
3. Liquid.		J, M, N, P.	

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортáнные), pronounced in the throat: Г, К, Х.
2. *Palatals* (поднéбные), uttered by the palate: Л, Н, Р.
3. *Dentals* (зубные), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: Д, Т.

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: ॥.
5. *Labials* (губные), produced between the lips: • 6, В, М, ІІ, Ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: з, с.
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth: Ж, Ч, Ш, ІІІ.

The vowel *υ* and the consonant *θ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *φ*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударение), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Pronunciation of the letters.

Vowels.

А, а.	Proper sound,	a (in <i>far</i> ): <i>ázbyka, alphabet; kásha, oat-meal.</i>
	Accidental sound,	
	e (in <i>pen</i> ): <i>újász, dread; chásy, watch; lóshadz, horse.</i>	o (in <i>go</i> ): <i>boľšágo, great; khágo, bad.</i>

— This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, щ, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *aro* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: *áhzbooka, káhsha, odeshess, tshessee, lóhshad, bahlshóhva, khuddhva.*

Я, я.	Proper sound,	ya (in <i>yard</i> ): <i>áma, duck; myáco, meat; zemlyá, earth.</i>
	Accidental sound,	

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yah* (*yáhma, myáhso, zemlyáh*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadró, dávet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus *zárjá, dawn; vrémyá, time*, are pronounced *zaryáh, vrátmyah*. The pronoun *eí*, *of her*, is pronounced *yaydáh*, and the syllable *ся* of pronominal verbs is pronounced *sah* as: *staráťся, to exert one's self (stahráhtsah)*.

Е, е.	Proper sound,	ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i> ): <i>edíntь, one; cíé, this; sérdečé, heart.</i>
	Accidental sound,	

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaideèn, seyyaie, saïtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, п), like *gh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a, o, y, ы, ɔ*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ен* or *ен* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, щ), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words *ёлка, fir*; *слезы, tears*; *ледъ, ice*; *житьё, life*; *моё, my*; *землею, by the earth*; *далекий, distant*; *несёшь, thou carriest*; *несёте, you carry*; *шёлкъ, silk*; *лице, face*; *душёю, with the soul*, are pronounced *yolka, slyðzee, lyot, zsheetyò, mah-yò, zamlyðyou, dalyðkee, nessyðsh, nessyðtai, shòlk, leetsò, dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; *берёза, жёлтый, ёлка, &c.*, and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *è* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in *Монтескьё* (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Б, ё. 
$$\begin{cases} \text{Proper sound,} & \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{я, а (in } yate, gate\text{): } \text{ъмъ, I eat;} \\ \text{вра, fault} \end{array} \right. \\ \text{Accidental sound,} & \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yo (in } yoke\text{): } \text{гнёзда, nest;} \\ \text{звёзды, stars.} \end{array} \right. \end{cases}$$

• This vowel *ø* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim, vaira*). However after the consonant *к*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus *нѣть*, *no*; *нѣм旳й*, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamdy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words *гнѣзда*, *nests*; *звѣзы*, *stars*; *сѣда*, *saddles*; *цвѣтъ*, *he flourished*; *обрѣтъ*, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: *звѣздочка*, *little star*; *гнѣздышко*, *little nest*; *разцвѣль*, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnydheda*, *zvuydhedee*, *sydhela*, *tsvuydлl*, *ahbrydлl*, *zvuydhadotshka*, *gnydhadishko*, *rahztsvuydлl*.

O, o. { Proper sound, o: *дома*, *at home*; *послѣ*, *after*.  
Accidental sound, ah: *хорошо*, *well*; *колокола*, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dомa*, *pôslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word *коловоль*, *bell*, is pronounced *kôhlokol* or *kôhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: *итти*, *to go*; *миръ*, *peace*.  
Accidental sound, yee: *имъ*, *to them*; *статьи*, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (*имъ*, *ихъ*, *ими*), and after the semi-vowel *в*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeem*, *yeemee*, *yeekh*, *stahtyeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *з*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words *въ избѣ*, *in the room*; *съ Ив醜омъ*, *with John*; *предъидущій*, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written *вызбѣ*, *сыв醜омъ*, *предъидущій*.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: *сынъ*, *son*; *льстецы*, *flatterers*.  
Accidental sound, we: *грибы*, *mushrooms*; *мы*, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *e*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwè*, *vwe*, *mwe*, *snapwè*, *sh'kafwè*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.  
Accidental sound, u French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *u* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronunciation of the above words is *youk*, *lyouublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

I, i, Y, y, Э, э, V, v.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерéй, *priest*; ми́ръ, *the world*; ўжинъ, *supper*; пáгуба, *loss*; э́тотъ, *this*; мýро, *holy chrism*, which are pronounced *yerey*, *meer*, *oðzsheen*, *pahgoobah*, *aitot*, *meero*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ъ, ь, ѹ), which are placed, the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, ѿ being half of the vowel *o*, and ѿ or ѿ half of the vowel *u*.

ъ, ѿ, Ѽ, ѿ.—The hard semi-vowel ѿ entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: *стань, shape; вязь, elm-tree; шесть, perch; кровь, roof; столъ, table; братъ, brother; пыль, flame; гусаръ, hussar; объ, from; гладъ, hunger; семъ, this; цѣль, flail*, are pronounced *stann, vyass, shesst, krohff, stoll, brahtt, peel, goosarr, ohpp, glahtt, semm, tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *и* confers a liquifying (Fr. mouillé) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: *стань, become; вязь, marsh; шесть, six; кровь, blood; столъ, so much; братъ, to take; пыль, dust; гусаръ, goose-herd; Объ, the Obi; гладъ, smooth road; семъ, seven; цѣль, chain*, are pronounced *stahn<sup>i</sup>* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyaz<sup>i</sup>, shesst<sup>i</sup>, krov<sup>i</sup>, stohl<sup>i</sup>, braht<sup>i</sup>, peel<sup>i</sup>, goosari, ohb<sup>i</sup>, gladi<sup>i</sup>, semi<sup>i</sup>, tsep<sup>i</sup>*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril, soleil, campagne, cigogne, ligne*. After the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ɛ* and *œ* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words *ножъ, knife, and рожъ, rye; мечъ, sword, and сѣчь, to cut; камышъ, reed, and мышъ, mouse; тощъ, fasting, and нощъ, night.* are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh, metch* and *setch, kahmeesh* and *meesh, tohsh'tsh* and *nohsh'tsh*.

**Й, Ӧ.**—The soft semi-vowel *й* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it forms but one syllable; thus the words *дай, give; пей, drink; мой, my; жуй, chew; вѣй, blow; карій, brownbay*, are pro-

nounced *da<sup>i</sup>*, or like *di* in *die*, *pe<sup>i</sup>*, *mo<sup>i</sup>*, *zshat<sup>i</sup>*, *ta<sup>i</sup>*, *kare<sup>i</sup>*, givin gutterance to a short *i* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants. as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, 6.	Proper sound	b:	бáба, old woman; бóбъ, bean; бáбка, cockle.
		v:	вонъ, away; ровъ, ditch; втóрникъ, Tuesday.
Д, д.	Proper sound	v:	дно, bottom; родъ, kind; вóдка, brandy.
		t:	ждо, wait; мужъ, husband; лóжка, spoon.
Ж, ж.	Proper sound	zh:	жду, I wait; мужъ, husband; лóжка, spoon.
		z:	звукъ, sound; глазъ, eye; сказка, story.

The feeble consonants *б*, *в*, *д*, *ж*, *з*, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that *ж* (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bábabah*, *bohp*, *bárpka*, *vohnn*, *rohff*, *fiôhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vóhtkah*, *zsh'doo*, *moosh*, *ôshshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where *зđ* is followed by *и*, the letter *đ* is silent: thus *пóздно*, *late*; *пráздникъ*, *feast*, are pronounced *rohzeno*, *prahzneek*. The word *дóждикъ*, *rain*, is pronounced *dóhzsh'zsheek*.

Г, г.	Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> :	горá, mountain; погибель, perdition.
		к: другъ, friend; мóгший, who could.
Г, г.	Accidental sound,	г: Госпóдъ, Lord; Бóра, of God.
		кк, ф: Богъ, God; лéгкий, light.
		в: краснаго, red; егó, of him.

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant *z* preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharáh*,

The compound consonant *ш* (штш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szce*, has the simple sound of *w* before the consonant *h*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *dhvosh'tsh*, and *ahvahshndy*, *pahmohshnik*.

ІІ, ІІ.	· · · · ·	<i>p</i> : павінь, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.	· · · · ·	<i>f</i> or <i>ph</i> : фонаръ, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфъ, scull-cap.
Х, х.	· · · · ·	<i>kh</i> , Germ. <i>ch</i> : храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
ІІІ, ІІІ.	Proper sound,	<i>sh</i> , Fr. <i>ch</i> , Germ. <i>ch</i> , Pol. <i>sz</i> : шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
ІІ, ІІ.	· · · · ·	<i>ts</i> , Germ. <i>z</i> : царь, <i>king</i> ; пе́репъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ѳ, є.	· · · · ·	<i>f</i> : єеа́тъ, <i>theatre</i> ; Аѳинъ, <i>Athens</i> .

These six strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleen*, *stohlp*, *fahnar*, *skoofyà*, *khrahmm*, *dookh*, *shah-lash*, *tsar*, *pahrets*, *fe-ah'r*, *afeenee*, observing that *x* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Dach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *ф*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	· · · · ·	<i>l</i> : ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.	· · · · ·	<i>m</i> : всъмъ, <i>to all</i> ; восьмъ, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.	Proper sound,	<i>n</i> : тронъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.	· · · · ·	<i>r</i> : радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *usaimm* and *uðhsem*; *trohnn* and *tron'*; *rahtt* and *ryahtt*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *я*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (ł). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (слогъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (слово). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (односложныя) or *polysyllables* (многосложныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: *и, and; я, I; онъ, he; ай, ah; сей, this; два, two; страхъ, fright, зи-мá, winter; до-рó-га, road; до-брó-дѣ-тель, virtue; до-брó-дѣ-тель-ный, virtuous, &c.*

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles въ, къ, съ, бъ, жъ, лъ (instead of *so*, *ko*, *co*, *bo*, *oche*, *li*). These words, called *asyllabics* (бессложныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: въ домъ, *in the house*; къ окну, *towards the window*; съ тобою, *with thee*; если бъ, *if*; однако жъ, *however*; точно лъ, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words мáло, *little*; го-тóво, *ready*; говорíте, *speak*, the syllables *ma*, *to*, *ri*, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Syllable  
and word

Tonic  
accent.

*ло, го, со, то.* This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударение), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (длинный), the others *short* (краткие).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as *зámокъ*, *castle*, and *замóкъ*, *lock*; *слóва*, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and *слóвá*, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word it is frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

#### READING-EXERCISE.

Вчера въ шесть часо́въ утра по́хали мы  
 Ftsheera f shest tshessoff ootra pah-yaikhalee mwe  
 Yesterday at six o'clock of the morning went we

верхомъ въ Потсдамъ. Ничегó нѣть скучнѣе ётой  
 verkhomm f Potsdam Neetshaiivo nyet skooshnaiyal altoy  
 on horseback to Potsdam. Nothing there is duller than thus

дороги: вездѣ глубо́кій песо́къ, и ни какихъ заниматель-  
 fahröghee: verdal gloobohkee pessok, ee neekahkeekh zaneemahtel-  
 road: every where a deep sand, and not any interest.

ныхъ предметовъ въ глаза не попада́ется. Но видъ  
 neekh ptaidmaltoff v' glahzah nai pahpahdayetsah. No veet  
 ing object to the eyes not presents itself. But the sight

Потсдама, а особливо Сань-Суси, очень хороши. Мы  
Potsdahmah, ah ahsahbleèvo San-Soosèe, ôtshain kharosh. Mwe  
of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We

остановились въ трактирѣ, не добѣжая до городскіхъ воротъ.  
ahstahnahvelees f' trakteèrai, nai da-yaizsh zshayah da garadskeèkh vahrot.  
stopped at the hotel, not arrvving to the city- gates.

Отдохнувъ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошли въ  
Addahkhnoov ee zakazahv ahbyaid, mwe pashlee v'  
Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into  
городъ. У воротъ записали наши имена. На парадномъ  
gorot. oo varot zahpeesahlee nashee eemainah. Nah parahdnom  
the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-

мѣстѣ противъ дворца, училась гвардія: прекрасные  
maistai prohteef dvahrtsah, ootsmeelahs gvahrdyah prakrahsneeyai  
place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine

люди, прекрасные мундіры! Видъ дворца со  
lyoudee, prakrahsneeyai moondeeree' Veed dvahrtshah sah  
men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from

стороны сада очень хороши. Городъ, вообще  
starahneè sahda otshain kharosh. Ghorod vah-ahbstshai  
the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general

прекрасно выстроены; въ большой улицѣ мнѣго  
prakrahsno vwestroyain, v' bahishoy ooletsai mnogo  
(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many

великолѣпныхъ домовъ, строенныхъ отчасти по образцу  
vaileekahlaipneekh dahmòf, stroyainneekh attshahstee pah ahbrahtsoo  
of magnificent houses, built parily on the model

огромнѣйшихъ римскихъ палатъ и на собственныея дѣнъги  
agtomneysheekh reemskeekh pahlaht ee na sòbstvainneeyah dèynghee  
of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences

покойнаго короля: онъ дарилъ ихъ, кому хотѣлъ. Теперь  
pakbunahvah kahralyâh on dareèl yeekh, kamoo khahtail. Taipe  
of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now

сі́и \* огро́мныи зда́нія пусты, илі занимáются  
 seeyèè agròmneeyah zdähneeyah poòstee, eeleeè zaneemàhyootsa  
 the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдáтами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть ру́сская цéрковь подъ  
 sahldáhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsarkov pahd  
 by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзи́раніемъ стáрого ру́сскаго солдáта, котóрый живётъ  
 nahdzeeràhneeyem starahvah rooskahvah sahldàtah, kahtoree zsheev' yòtt  
 the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времéнъ цáрствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы  
 tahm sah vraimain tsàrstvovaneeyah eemperatretsee àhnnee. Mwe  
 there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насíлу моглí сыскáть егó. Дрáхлый старíкъ  
 nahseèloo maghleeè seeskaht yaivo. Dr'yakhlee stahreèk  
 with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидéль на большихъ крéслахъ, и услы́шавъ, что  
 seedail na bahlsheèkh kreslahkh, ee oosleèshahv shto  
 was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Ру́сские, протяну́ль къ намъ ру́ки, и  
 mwe rooskeeyai, prahtyahnool k' nahm rookee. ee  
 we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожáшимъ гóлосомъ сказáль: Слáва Бóгу! Слáва Бóгу!  
 drahzshàstsheem golossem skahzahl: slavah Bohoo! slàvah Bohoo!  
 with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотéль говорить сперва съ нáми по-ру́сски: но мы  
 ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervah s' nàhmee pah-rooskee: no mwe  
 He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудóмъ моглí разумéть другъ дру́га. Намъ надлежáло  
 s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomalt droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizshahlo  
 with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторáть почтý кáждое слóво. „Пойдёмте въ цéрковь  
 pahntahryáht pahtshtèè kàzhdoyai slovo. „Pie-dyòdmái f tsarkov  
 to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Бóжю, сказáль онъ, и помóлнимся вмéсть, хотá нынъ  
 Bòzsheeyou, skahzahli on, ee pahmòhleemsa vmalstai, khahtyáh neènai  
 of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

и нáть прáзника.“ Сéрдце моё напóлнилось  
 ee n'yet pràzneekah.“ Séirtse mah-yòh napòhineelos  
 even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself

благовéніемъ, когда отворíлась дверь въ цéрковь,  
 blahahgahvaineyaim, kaghda ahtvareèlas dvair f' tsairkov,  
 with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

гдé стóлько врéмени цárствуетъ глубóкое молчáніе,  
 ghdai stòlko vraimainee tsàrstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltshàneeyai,  
 where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

едвá перéрывáемое слáбыми вздохами и тíхимъ гóлосомъ  
 yaidvah perereevàyaimoyai slàhbemee vzdohkhahmee ee teèkheem ghòlossom  
 hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

стáрца, который по воскресéньямъ прихóдить тудá читáть  
 stàrtsah, kahtohree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetah  
 of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

святéйшую изъ книгъ, приготовляющу его къ  
 svyahtèyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyàyoustshooyou yaivoh k'  
 the most holy of the books, preparing him to

блажéнной вéчности. Въ цéркви всé чисто. Церкóвныя  
 blahzshainnoy valtshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tshèsto. Tsairkovneeyah  
 the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

книги и ютварь хранятся въ сундукé. Отъ врéмени до  
 knéeghee ee oòtvahr khrahnyàtsah f' soondookal. Aht vraimenee doh  
 books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

врéмени старíкъ перебирáеть ихъ съ молýтвою. „Чáсто  
 vraimainee stahreèk perebeeràyait yekh s' mahleètvoyou. „Tshàsto  
 time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

отъ всéгò сéрдца, сказáль онъ, сокрушáюсь я о томъ, что  
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzahli on, sahkrooshàyous yah ah tomm, shto  
 from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

сій " огромный здания пусты, или занимаются  
 seyecè agròmneeyah zdähneeyah poðstee, eeleè zaneemàhyootsah  
 the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамъ есть русская церковь подъ  
 sahldàhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsalrkov pahd  
 by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзориемъ старого русского солдата, который живеть  
 nahdzeeràhneeyem stàrahvah rooskahvah sahdatah, kahtoree zsheev'yott  
 the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времёнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы  
 tahm sah vraimain tsarstvovaneeyah eemperatreètsee àhnne. Mwe  
 there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

наслу моглі сыскать егo. Дряхлый старикъ  
 nahseèloo maghleè seeskaht yavno. Dr'yakhlee stahreèk  
 with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большіхъ креслахъ, и усыпавъ, что  
 seedail na bahlsheekh kréslakh, ee oosleshahv shto  
 was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русские, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и  
 mwe rooskeeyai, prahyahnool k' nahm rookee, ee  
 we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказаъ: Слава Богу! Слава Богу!  
 drahzhàstsheem golossom skahzah!: slavah Bohoo! slàvah Bohoo!  
 with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы  
 ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervah s' nàhmee pah-roosskee: no mwe  
 He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ моглі разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало  
 s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomalt droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo  
 with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдёмте въ церковь  
 pahvtahryàht pahtshtee kàzhdoyai slòvo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsalrkov  
 to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Бóжю, сказáль онъ, и помóлнимся вмóтъ, хотá нынъ  
 Bózsheeyou, skahzah! on, ee pahmöhleemsma vmaistai, khahtyáh neéna:  
 of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

и нéть прáздника.“ Сéрдце моё напóлнилось  
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sártse mah-yoh napóhlneelos  
 even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself

благовéніемъ, когда отворíлась дверь въ цéрковь,  
 blahahgahvalneeyaim, kaghda ahtvareélas dvair f' tsairkov,  
 with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

гдá стóлько врéмени цáрствуетъ глубóкое молчáніе,  
 ghdyai stolko vraimainee tsarstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltshaneeyai,  
 where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

едвá перéрывáемое слáбыми вздохами и тíхимъ гóлосомъ  
 yaidvah perereevayaimoya slahbemee vzdohkhahmee ee teekheem gholossom  
 hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

стáрца, который по воскресéньямъ прихóдить тудá читáть  
 startsah, kahtohree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetah  
 of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

святýшую изъ книгъ, приготовляющую его къ  
 svyahteyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyayoustshooyou yaivoh k'  
 the most holy of the books, preparing him to

блажéнной вéчности. Въ цéркви всé чисто. Церковныя  
 blahzshainnoy vaitshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheesto. Tsarkovneeyah  
 the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

книги и ютварь хранíтся въ сундукé. Отъ врéмени до  
 kneéghhee ee ootvahr khrahnyatsah f' soondookai. Aht vraimainee doh  
 books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

врéмени старикъ перебираеть ихъ съ молитвою. „Чáсто  
 vraimainee stahreèk perebeerayait yeekh s' mahleetvoou. „Tshasto  
 time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

отъ всегó сéрдца, сказáль онъ, сокрушаюсь я о томъ, что  
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzah! on, sahrooshayous yah ah tomm, shto  
 from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

по смерти моей, которая отъ меня конечно ужé не  
pah smairtee mah-yèè, kahtorayah aht mainyàh kahtnaishno oozshaï nai  
after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)

далёко, нé кому будéть смотрéть за цéрковью.“ — Съ  
dahlyohko, nai kahmoo boodait smahtrait zah tsairkovyou.“ — S<sup>o</sup>  
far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During

полчасá пробыли мы въ семъ свящéнномъ мéстѣ,  
poltsahsà probwelee mwè f' saim svyahststshainnom malstai,  
half an hour remained we in this holy spot,

простились съ почтéннымъ старикомъ, и пожелали ему  
prahsteeëlees s' pahtshtainneem stahreekom, ee pahzshailàlee yaimoo  
bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him

тихой смерти.  
teèkhoy smairtee.  
an easy death.

Карамзинъ.  
Kahrahmzeèn.

Elements of speech. 13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (зnamenátelnyia) or *auxiliary* (sluzhébnyia). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птицы летáютъ по вóздуху, а рыбы живутъ въ водé, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: птицы, летаютъ, вóздуху, рыбы, живутъ, водé, and the auxiliary words are: *no, a, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (чáсти), and the latter the *particles of speech* (частíцы рéчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; 'namely:

## I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мъстоименіе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (наречіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

## II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлόгъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междометіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Fieber*; and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume; ein Hut, eine Fieber; a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человѣкъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; Нѣкоторый человѣкъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me*.

14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Divisio  
of word

as are not formed from other words; e. g. *садъ*, *garden*; *женá*, *woman*; *бýлый*, *white*; *жить*, *to live*. The *derivatives* (произвóдныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. *садóвникъ*, *gardener*; *жéнскíй*, *womanly*; *бýлизна*, *whiteness*; *пережíть*, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. *садовóдство*, *horticulture*, from *садъ*, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and *водíть*, *cultivate*; *трудó любíе*, *love of work*, from *трудъ*, *work*, and *любíть*, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots  
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: *зрю*, *I see*; *зрénie*, *the sight*; *зрýмый*, *visible*; *зóркíй*, *sharp-sighted*; *обозрéть*, *to examine*, the root is the syllable *зр* or the mixed consonant *зр*, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables *ю*, *нie*, *имýй*, *кíй*, *обо*, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*. 1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots *вид*, *ок*, *рук*, whence the words *видъ*, *sight*; *óко*, *eye*; *рукá*, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придáточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. *изъ*, *of*; *въ*, *in*; *съ*, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the *principal* roots; e. g. *вýдный*, *visible*; *очки*, *spectacles*; *поручíть*, *to commit*. Thus the *secondary* roots

are: a) *initial* (предъи́дущие), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. *у-хóдъ*, *departure*; *от-казъ*, *refusal*; and b) *final* (послѣдующие), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. *вод-д*, *water*; *зем-лъ*, *earth*; *крас-ный*, *red*; *дѣл-ать*, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words *преизбыточествовать*, *to superabound*, and *засвидѣтельствование*, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *ство* and *вание*, there remain the words *избыточство*, *abundance*, and *свидѣтельство*, *testimony*, which are derived from *избытокъ*, *superfluity*, and *свидѣтель* (in Slavonian *свидѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from *избытъ*, *to abound*, and *свѣдѣть*, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *съ*, joined to the simple verbs *быть*, *to be*, and *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдѣть*, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word *преизбыточествовать* is *бы*; the steps of its formation being apparent: *быть*, *избытъ*, *избытокъ*, *избыточство*, *избыточествовать*, *преизбыточествовать*; the word *засвидѣтельствование* has *вѣд* for its root, whence are derived: *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдѣть*, *свѣдѣть*, *свидѣтель* (in Russian *свидѣтель*), *свидѣтельство*, *свидѣтельствовать*, *засвидѣтельствовать*, *засвидѣтельствование*.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: *независимость*, *independence*; *неизмѣримый*, *immensurable*; *предсѣдательствовать*, *to preside*; *состраданіе*, *compassion*; *изобрѣтательность*, *invention*, *inventive faculty*; *вспомогательный*, *auxiliary*; *честолюбіе*, *ambition*; *удовлетворительный*, *satisfactory*; *путешѣственникъ*, *traveller*; *законодательство*, *legislation*; *земледѣльческій*, *agricultural*; *паредврѣпъ*, *courtier*.

*Inflections of words.* 16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукю, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлы, *white*; бѣлѣши, *whiter*; побѣлье, *a little whiter*, &c.

*Metaplasms of words.* 17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усъченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

*Permutation of letters.* 18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxtaposition with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, ѿ; г, к, х; п) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ѿ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lisping consonants (д, т; з, с); and further the vowel у, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; п), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, ѿ), as is seen below.

## PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з,	· · · · ·	change into ж.
2. The consonants к, т, п,	before я, е, ю, ѿ,	change into ч.
3. The consonants х, с,		change into ш.
4. The consonants ск, ст,	· · · · ·	change into ѿ.
5. The vowel я,	after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, ѿ; п,	changes into а.
6. The vowel ѿ,	after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, ѿ; п,	changes into ѿ.
7. The vowel и, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, ѿ; п,	· · · · ·	changes into и.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, ѿ; п,	· · · · ·	changes into е.
9. The vowel ѿ, after the vowel и,	· · · · ·	changes into и.
10. The semi-vowel ѿ, after a vowel,	· · · · ·	changes into ѿ.
11. The semi-vowels ѿ and и, before a consonant with ѿ,		change into е.
12. The semi-vowel ѿ, before two consonants,	· ·	changes into о.

Examples: 1) служить, *to serve*; вижу, *I see*; рѣжь, *cut*, from слуга, servant; видѣть, *to see*; рѣзать, *to cut*; 2) мучить, *to torment*; свѣчя, *candle*; отѣчество, *native land*, from мѣка, torment; сльз, *light*; отѣц, *father*; 3) тише, *slower*; прошѣніе, *petition*, from тихъ, *slow*; просить, *to ask*; 4) ищу, *I seek*; чище, *purer*, from искать, *to seek*; чистъ, *pure*; 5) служа (for служа), *serving*; 6) вожу, (for вожю), *I lead*; 7) руки, *the hands*; мѣжи, *the men* (for руки, мѣжы); 8) пальцемъ (for пальцомъ), *with the finger*; 9) въ Россіи (for въ Россіѣ), *in Russia*; 10) недѣля, *week*, has for its genitive plural недѣль; whilst шея, *the neck*, has шей; 11) судбѣ, *destiny*; копѣйка, *copseck*, have in the genitive plural судѣбъ, копѣекъ (for судѣбъ, копѣйкъ); 12) во мнѣ, *in me*; со всѣмъ, *with all* (for въ мнѣ, со всѣмъ).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation **ж** and **ш**, **в** гра́днинъ, *citizen*; **пища**, *aliment*, from **градъ**, city; **нурáть**, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after **ж**, **ч**, **ш**, **щ**, **ц**), the vowel *o* may be used, as **хорошо**, *well*; **плечо**, *shoulder*; **яйцо**, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where **г**, **к**, **х**, **ц**, are changed before **н** and **к**, as **нóжка**, *a little foot*; **вéчный**, *eternal*; **пастúшка**, *shepherdess*; **лíчный**, *personal* (from **ногá**, *foot*; **вéкъ**, *an age*; **пасту́хъ**, *shepherd*; **личé**, *individual*), the change is not required by the letters **н** and **к**, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel **б**, before which the consonants **г**, **к**, **х**, **ц**, change into **ж**, **ч**, **ш**, was employed before those consonants (**нбожька**, **вбчъний**, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

**Epenthesis and prosthesis.** 19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in *juxta-position*. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. **огонь**, *fire*; **вéтеръ**, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian **огнъ**, **вътръ**); **законодáтель**, *legislator*; **землеопи-сáние**, *geography*. The consonant **л** is inserted also after the labials (**б**, **в**, **м**, **п**, **ф**), when they ought to be followed by **ю** or **е**; e. g. **люблю**, *I love*; **дешéвле**, *cheaper* (from **любить**, *to love*; **дёшево**, *cheap*). The consonant **н** is also epenthetic in **внушáть**, *to suggest*; **поднимáть**, *to take up*; **на негó**, *against him*. The consonant **с** is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *о*; e. g. **восемь**, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian **осьмъ**); **острый**, *sharp*; **вóтчина**, *patrimony* (used familiarly for **острый**, **óтчина**). The same is the

case with the vowel *o* in *оржано́й*, *of rye* (for

20.—*Apocope*, or the cutting of a letter at the end<sup>1</sup> of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, e. g. *со мной*, *with me*; *чтобы*, *in order that*; *двинуть*, *to move*; *объщать*, *to promise*; *блеснуть*, *to shine*; *полтора*, *one and a half* (instead of *со мною*, *чтобы*, *двигнуть*, *объщать*, *блестнуть*, *полтора*).

#### THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительные имена) in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарицательные), as: *человекъ*, *man*; *городъ*, *town*; *рѣка*, *river*; and individual or *proper nouns* (собственные), as: *Владимиръ*, *Vladimir*; *Москвѣ*, *Moscow*; *Волга*, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собирательные), such are: *народъ*, *people*; *стадо*, *herd*; *лѣсъ*, *forest*; also *material nouns* (вещественные), such are: *мука*, *flour*; *масло*, *oil*; *золото*, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a) christian names* (крѣстные имена), as: *Александръ*, *Alexander*; *Лѣвъ*, *Leon*; *Ольга*, *Olga*; *Любовь*, *Amy*; *b) patronymic names* (отчественные), as: *Александровичъ* and *Александровна*, *son* and *daughter of Alexander*; *Львовичъ* and *Львовна*, *son* and *daughter of Leon*; and *c) family names* (прозвищные, фамильные), as: *Державинъ*, *Derzhavin*; *Орловъ*, *Orlof*; *Долгорукій*, *Dolgoroovy*; *Толстоій*, *Tolstoi*.

Properties of nouns. 22.—The properties of substantivès in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (числó) and the *case* (падéжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders 23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (жéнскій) and the *neuter* (срéдній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отéць, *the father*; герóй, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дядя, *an uncle*; мénáло, *a money-changer*; подмастéрье, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ь, й, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домъ, *the house*; покóй, *repose*; корáбль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестrá, *the sister*; нáня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Ели-савéть, *Elizabeth*; Кlio, *Clio*: also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ь; e. g. книга, *a book*, пúля, *a ball*; добродéтель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of *animate* beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитá and чáдо, *a child*; чудóвище, *a monster*; and also the names of *animate* and *abstract*

objects terminating in *о*, *е*, and *ия*, e. g. золото, *gold*; море, *the sea*; время, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance:

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: человекъ, *a man*; носорогъ, *a rhinoceros*; соколь, *a falcon*; окунь, *a perch*; or feminine, as: обезьяна, *an ape*; собака, *a dog*; лошадь, *a horse*; щука, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in *б*, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: a) The names of the months, as: январь, *January*; июль, *July*; декабрь, *December*, &c. b) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in *тель*, as: числитель, *the numerator*; множитель, *the multiplier*, &c. c) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гусь, *a goose*; лось, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: лошадь, *a horse*; сельдь, *a herring*; вошь, *a louse*; мышь, *a mouse*; форель, *the trout*, and some others. d) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: Ярославль, *Yaroslav*; Севастополь, *Sebastopol*; Брюссель, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of Казань, *Kazan*; Астрахань, *Astrachan*; Тверь, *Tvair*; Версаль, *Versailles*; Булонь, *Boulogne*; Марсель, *Marseilles*; Испагань, *Isfahan*; Эривань, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: a) All the names of abstract objects, e. g. жизнь, *life*; честь, *honour*, &c., with the exception of день, *the day*; пречень, *an extract*; вопль, *cries*; вихрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контроль, *control*; пароль, *parole*; спектакль, *spectacle*; стиль, *style*. b) The names of rivers and countries; e. g. Обь, *the Obi*; Сибирь, *Siberia*, &c., except Анадырь, *Anadir*. c) The common names of inanimate objects; e. g. бровь, *the eyebrow*; ветвь, *a branch*; церковь, *a church*, &c., except the following which are *masculine*:

алкоголь, alcohol.	костыль, a crutch-stich.	ревень, the rhubarb.
алтарь, an altar.	кочень, a head of cab-	ремень, a strap.
бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.	кремень, a flint. [bage.	рубль, a rooble.
бешиметь, Tartar under	кремль, citadel, castle.	руль, the helm.
бизань, mizzen-sail.	крайдель, a cracknel.	сбить, honey-tea.
биль, a billiard ball.	кубарь, a top.	сердь, a seraglio. *
блайгирь, massicot. [sail.	ку́дерь, curly hair.	складень, a necklace.
брәмсель, top-gallant	ку́коль, corn-cockle.	слайзень, the slug.
бредень, a drag-net?	куль, a mat-sack.	словарь, a dictionary.
букварь, ABC-book.	лагерь, a camp.	срольен, double branche.
бюллетень, a bulletin.	лапоть, a bast-shoe.	ставень, a window-
вексель, bill of exchange.	ларь, a large chest.	shutter.
вэнзель, a monogram.	лажень, foundation beam.	стаксель, stay-sail.
воздырь, a tubercle.	лакоть, the elbow.	стапель, stocks, launch.
гвоздь, a nail.	ломоть, a slice.	стебель, a stalk.
глаголь, a crane.	марсель, top-sail.	стёржень, core ( <i>of a boil</i> ).
горбиль, a sleeve-board.	мергель, marl.	стихарь, the surplice.
госпиталь, a hospital.	миндаль, almonds.	сударь, a winding-sheet.
гребень a comb.	миткаль, calico.	сухарь, a rusk, biscuit.
грифель, a slate-pencil.	монастырь, a convent.	тополь, the poplar.
груэль, a fungus.	мусель, a mouffle.	трёзвесть, the curb.
дёготь, tar.	нашатырь, sal ammoniac.	трюфель, a truffle.
динарь, denarius.	николь, nickel.	түфель, a slipper.
дождь, rain.	ноготь, a finger-nail.	уголь, charcoal.
дягиль, angelica.	нуль, a cipher, zero.	уровень, a level.
, an acorn.	огонь, fire.	фитиль, a match. [ <i>house</i> ].
, the jonquille.	орарь, the stole.	флайгель, a wing ( <i>of a</i>
золотень, golden-rod.	панцирь, coat of mail.	фонарь, a lantern.
зубарь, a toothed plane.	пень, a stump.	фүхтель, flat side of a
йверень, a splinter.	перистиль, a peristyle.	хмаль, the hop. [sword.
инбёрь, ginger.	перкаль, shirting calico.	хбдень, an object in mo-
калриль, a quadrille.	перстень, a ring.	tion.
календарь, almanach.	пистоль, a pistole.	хрусталь, crystal.
камень, a stone.	пламень, flame.	циркуль, pair of compass.
картофель, potatoes.	пластырь, a plaster.	цоколь, the socle. [ses.
кашель, a cough.	плетень, wattled hedge.	чекмень, cosack upper-
кёгель, a skittle.	портфель, a portfolio.	coat.
кёрвель, chervil.	пёршень, a piston.	черноталь, bay-leaved
киль, the keel ( <i>of a ship</i> ).	проблажень, place chafed	willow.
кіненъ, hot-spring.	by lying.	чихарь, new wine.
, a sourish jelly.	противень, dripping-pan.	шёлудь, the scab.
bullet tied to a	пробиль, a profile.	шёфель, a bushel.
, a claw. [string.	пузырь, a bladder.	шкврень, pole-bolt ( <i>of</i>
козырь, a trump.	пунирь, a pimple.	<i>a coach</i> ).
колбезъ, a well.	пустырь, a vacant space.	шниль, a capstan.
кормынъ, wild nard.	путь, the road.	штэмпель, a stamp.
корабль, a ship.	пэналь, money.	штиль, a calm.
корень, a root.	рашкуль, blue-black.	шавель, sorrel.
косарь, chopping knife.	рашниль, a rasp.	щебень, rubbish.

э́рь, the letter *в*.      я́корь, ah anker.      а́сень, the ash-tree.  
 э́ль, the letter *Л*.      я́нтарь, sea-amber.      ячмень, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *u*, *y*, *ю*, as: *колибри*, a *humming bird*; *какаду*, the *cockatoo*; *ревю*, the *review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. *громкое ура*, a *noisy hurrah*; *первое ныть*, the *first no*; *несносное я*, an *insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common gender* (общий), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродя́га, a vagabond ( <i>man or woman</i> ).	обжóра, a glutton ( <i>man or woman</i> ).
брюзга́, a grumbler.	плáкса, a weeper.
ворожéй, a fortune-teller.	пору́ка, a surety.
вы́скочка, an upstart.	пусточе́ля, a chatterer.
втвреница, a volatile person.	пьяни́ца, a drunkard.
гуля́ка, a lazy person.	рази́ни, a loiterer.
дóка, a clever fellow.	рóвня, a person of the same age
заби́ка, a squabbler	рубáка, a slasher.
зайка, a stammerer.	самоúчка, a self-taught person.
зывáка, a mnny, a cockney.	свято́ша, a bigoted person.
кравошéя, a wryneck.	сиротá, an orphan.
лакомка, a dainty person.	тезка, a namesake.
леви́ша, a left-handed person	убийца, a murderer or murderess.
моты́га, a prodigal person.	умни́ца, a clever person.
невéжда, an ignorant person	ханжá, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. *отéць*, the *father*, and *мать*, the *mother*; *сынъ*, the *son*, and *дочь*, the *daughter*; *брать*, the *brother*; and *сестрá*, the *sister*; *быкъ*, the *bull*, and *корóва*, the *cow*; *петухъ*, the *cock*, and *курица*, the *hen*; *барáнъ*, the *ram*, and *овцá*, the *sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. *другъ*, a *friend*; *врагъ*, an *enemy*; *товарищъ*, a *companion*; *дитя*, a *child* (*male and female*); *осо́ба*, a *person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable nouns* (движимыя), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *а, я, ка, ока, иха, ица, ница, ина, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кумъ, godmother.	шутъ; шутовка, a buffoon, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
павлинъ, peacock; пава, peahen.	левъ, a lion; львица, a lioness.
господинъ, master; госпожа, mistress.	императоръ, emperor; -ратрица, empress.
тестъ, father-in-law; тѣща, mother-in-law.	жрецъ, priest; жрица, priestess.
дуракъ; дура, a fool, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	карла; карлица, a dwarf, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
козлъ, a he-goat; коза, a she-goat.	житель; жительница, inhabitant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
гость; гостья, a guest, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	монахъ, a monk; монахиня, a nun.
игуменъ, an abbot; игуменья, an abbess.	князъ, prince; княгиня, princess.
лгунъ; лгунья, a liar, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	герой, hero; геройня, heroine.
сосѣдъ;сосѣдка, a neighbour, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	богъ, a god; богиня, a goddess.
слугъ, man-servant; -жанка, maid-servant.	графъ, count; графиня, countess.
настухъ, shepherd, -ушка, shepherdess.	опекунъ; опекунша, a guardian, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
крестьянинъ; крестьянка, peasant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	великанъ, giant; великанша, giantess.
самецъ, a male; самка, a female.	король, king; королева, queen.
хозяинъ, host; хозяйка, hostess.	баронъ, baron; баронесса, baroness.
жидъ, a Jew; жидовка, a Jewess.	государь; государыня, sovereign, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
чижъ, siskin; чижовка, hen-siskin.	старикъ, an old man; старуха, an old woman.
щѣголь, a beau; щеголиха, a belle.	швепъ, sempster; швей, sempstress.
поваръ, a cook; повариха, a cook-maid.	свёкоръ, father-in-law; свекрь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e. g. инспекти́рка, *inspectress*, and инспекто́рша, *wife of an inspector*; лека́рка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and ле́карша, *wife of a doctor*; дво́рница, *a female door-keeper*, and дво́рничиха, *wife of a door-keeper*; учите́льница, *schoolmistress*; and учите́льша, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from инспекто́ръ, лека́рь, дво́рникъ and учите́ль).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these aspects.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (уве́личительные), which terminate in the masculine in *ище*, *ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужи́чыше*, *a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина*, *a great blockhead*; *личи́ще*, *great face*; *лáпища*, *a great paw* (from *музы́къ*, *дурáкъ*, *лицё* and *лáпа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительные), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ*, *окъ*, *екъ*, *еу́з*, *якъ*; in the neuter in *ко*, *це*, and in the feminine in *ка*, *ища*, e. g. *стóликъ*, *little table*; *червáкъ*, *little worm*; *завóдецъ*, *little manufactory*; *деревó*, *little tree*; *рúчка*, *little hand*; *вещи́ца*, *little thing* (from *столъ*, *червъ*, *завóдъ*, *дерево*, *рукá* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *стóличекъ*, *червячёкъ*, *рúчечка*, *вещи́чка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: a) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка*, *юшка*, *енъка*, as: *бáтишка*, *dear father*; *мáтушка*, *dear mother*; *мáменька*, *dear mamma* (from *бáтья*, *мáть* and *мáма*); and b) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ишко*, *ишка*, *енка*, e. g. *дóмишко*, *a miserable little house*; *лошадёнка*, *a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Ивáнъ*,

*John*; Пётръ, *Peter*; Сербъ, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling Вáня, Цéтя, Серёжа, and as diminutives of contempt Вáнька, Пéтька, Серёжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

- The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

**Numbers.** 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (единственное число), as: столъ, *the table*; книга, *a book*; окнó, *the window*; and the *plural* (множественное), as: столы, *the tables*; книги, *books*; окна, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (двойственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебрó, *silver*; ясность, *evidence*; любовь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

<i>Masculine gender.</i>	<i>Neuter gender.</i>	<i>Feminine gender.</i>
квасцý, alum.	бълýла, white lead.	бирюльки, the needle game.
люди, people	ворота, yard-gate.	имянины, a name-day.
обой, tapestry.	древá, fire-wood.	вóжницы, scissors.
опылки, saw-dust.	крóсла, an arm-chair	окóбы, fetters, chains.
очки, spectacles.	перýла, a balustrade.	отруби, bran.
прогóны, post-fare.	письменá, letters.	родинн, delivery
пáльцы, a sewing-frame.	раменá, shoulders.	рыль, a hurdy-gurdy.
судки, a cruet stand.	устá, mouth.	санн, sledge.
тиски, a press.	чернила, ink.	сúмерки, dawn.
щипцы, snuffers.	чресла, the loins.	сúтки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бельцы, Вáзники, Крестцы, of the *masculine* gender, and Бóйницы, Холмогóры, and the foreign names: Аéйны, *Athens*; Яссы, *Iassy*; Фéйвы, *Thebes*, of the *feminine* gender.

26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns Cases. assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one *case*, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто*, *когд*, *кому*, *когд*, *кем*, *о ком*? and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что*, *чегд*, *чему*, *что*, *чим*, *о чём*? These are: • •

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что*? e. g.

*Кто* учится? *Ученикъ.* Who studies? *The scholar.*

*Что* предъ *нимъ* лежитъ? What is before him? *A book.*  
*Книга.*

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *когд* or *чегд*? and also *чей*, *чья*, *чёй*? In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

*Хозяинъ* (*чегд?*) *дома.* The master (*of what?*) *of the house.*

*Домъ* (*чей?*) *сосѣда.* The house (*of whom?*) *of the neighbour.*

*Слѣшайся* (*когд?*) *матери.* Obey (*whom?*) *thy mother.*

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому* or *чему*? In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

*Кому* слѣдуетъ сiй нагrада? To whom does this recompense come? *To the scholar.*

*Чему* ты обрадовался? *Книгъ.* With what were you delighted? *With a book.*

4. The *accusative* (винительный), which commonly called in English grammars the *objective*, answers to the question *кого* or *что*? e. g.

*Кого* ты хвaлишь? *Ученика.* Whom do you praise? *The scholar.*  
*Что* ты купилъ? *Книгу.* What have you bought? *A book.*

5. The *vocative* (звательный), which expresses the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

*Ученикъ*, будь прилѣжъ! *Scholar*, be attentive!

*Боже*, спаси Царя! *God*, save the Emperor!

6. The *instrumental* (творительный) or *causative*, which designates the means or cause, and answers to the question *къмъ* or *чъмъ*? In English the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used for this purpose; e. g.

*Къмъ* довольны? *Ученикомъ.* With whom is one satisfied?  
*With the scholar.*

*Чъмъ* онъ забавляется? *Кни- гою.* With what does he amuses himself? *With a book.*

7. The *prepositional* (предложный) or *locative*, which answers to the questions *о комъ* or *о чѣмъ*? *въ комъ* or *въ чѣмъ*? &c. This case, which in ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказательный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions *въ*, *in*; *на*, *on*; *о* or *объ*, *of*; *по*, *after*; *при*, *near to*; e. g.

*О комъ* говорятъ? *Объ уче- никъ.* Of whom do they speak? *Of the scholar.*

*Въ чѣмъ* ты нахдишь удоволь- ствие? *Въ книгъ.* In what do you find pleasure? *In a book.*

Two of these seven casual inflections, the nominative and vocative, are called *direct cases* (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, я); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, мя), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ю). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words *Богъ*, *God*; *Господъ*, *Lord*; *Иисусъ*, *Jesus*; *Христосъ*, *Christ*; *Отецъ*, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; *Бóзce*, *Гóсподи*, *Iucýce*, *Xrisme*, *O'mue*.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *шатель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as *знаменатель*, *the denominator*; *длитель*, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their accusative is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: спутникъ, a *satellite* (of a planet). The word идолъ, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synomyms кумиръ and истуканъ, the accusative is like the nominative. The word лицо, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as народъ, a *nation*; войско, an *army*; стадо, a *herd*.

### DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

CATEGORIES	FIRST.		SECOND.		THIRD.	
	MASC. TERMINATION.	NEUTER TERMINATION.	FEM. TERMINATION.			
Hard infl. Soft infl. Hard infl. Soft infl. Hard infl. Soft infl.						
SINGULAR	ъ	ѣ	ъ	о	е	и
N.	ъ	ѣ	ъ	о	е	и
G.	а	я	а	я	еи	ы
D.	у	ю	ю	у	еи	ѣ (и)
A.	like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> . . .					у
V.	like the <i>Nominative</i> . . .					ю
I.	омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	ею (оѣ) ею (еї) ю (ъю)
P.	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ (и)
PLURAL	ы	и	и	а	я	и
N.	ы	и	и	а	я	и
G.	овъ (оѣ) евъ	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и, иї) еи	ѣ (еї) ѣ (и, иї) еї	ы
D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	амъ
A.	like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> . . .					
V.	like the <i>Nominative</i> . . .					
I.	ами	ямы	ямы	ами	ямы	ямы
P.	ахъ	ахъ	ахъ	ахъ	ахъ	ахъ

ules of the  
lections.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, a) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ); b) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (ү; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (ү) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; c) the vowel *n* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iү*, *ie* and *ia*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

General  
rules.

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in b) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *o* after the consonant *я*, and for *ү* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *o* and *ү*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *eү* (instead of *oү* and *ү*) is peculiar to nouns in *жcb*, *шcb*, *шcb*, *шcb*, to those in *жca*, *чa*, *шa*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *be* and in *ba*; the inflection *ү* to nouns in *e* and *a* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *iү* to nouns in *be* and *ba*, contracted from *ie* and *ia*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, *хорóмы*, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (закóны); *щипцы*, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (отцóы); *обóи*, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (герóы); *люди*, *men* (instr. людьмíй), according to the 9th (королíй); among the *neuter* nouns, *дровá*, *firewood*, according to the 11th (словá); *крéолa*, *arm-chair* (gen. крéсель), according to the 12th (стёкла); *письменá*, *letters*, according to the 18th (временá); among the *feminine* nouns, *окóбы*, *chains*, according

to the 19th (корóбы); *носíлки*, a *hand-barrow* (*gen.* *носíлокъ*), according to the 20th (пáлки); *сáни*, a *sledge*, and *рыль*, a *hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (стráстя).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *z*, *й*, *б*; *a*, *и*, *в*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *e*, *u*, *o*, *у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus *бóнибусъ*, *an omnibus*; *Лóндóнъ*, *London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (закóнь); *конвóй*, a *convoy*; *Барклáй*, *Barclay*, according to the 6th (герóй); *вóдевиль*, a *vaudeville*; *Брюсéль*, *Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (корóль); *piéса*, a *piece*, (of music, &c.); *Петрárка*, *Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корóва); *колóníя*, a *colony*, according to the 26th (мóлнія); *гáвань f.* a *haven*, according to the 27th (стráсть). But *кóфе*, *coffee*; *колíбри*, a *humming-bird*; *депó*, *depot* (military); *ráндеву*, a *rendez-vous*; *ревю*, a *review*; *Кáстелрé*, *Castlereagh*; *Морó*, *Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as *Жанлíсь*, *Стáль*, &c.; thus we say: *у Госпожи Жанлíсь*, *at the house of Mrs Genlis*; *сочинéние Госпожи Стáль*, *the work of Mrs Staél*.

Special  
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ёнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *яна* or *ана*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *принъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *ои* is contracted in *ої*, *еи* in *еї*, and *ио* in *иї*; thus we say: *рукóю* or *рукóй*, *with the hand*; *землéю* or *землéй*, *by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* *ямы* of some nouns in *в* is contracted in *ъми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: *людъмí*, *with men*; *дверъмí*, *by gates*; *лошадъмí*, *with horses* (and not *людáми*, *дверáми*, *лошадáми*).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *з*, *б*, *й*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *а* and *и*); thus we say: *фунтъ сáхару*, *a pound of sugar*; *лóжка дёсно*, *a spoonful of tar*; *чáшка чáю*, *a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *n*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *з* and *й*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ садъ*, *in the garden*; *на краю*, *on the brink*.

5. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Царьградъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *G. Царяграда*, *D. Царяграду*, *I. Царемъграомъ*, *P. о Царяградъ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *нóвъ* and *блъзъ*, as *Нóвгородъ*, *Бълобозеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *пóлъ*, *the half*: as: *пóлдень*, *midday*; *пóлгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms.

Paradigms  
of the de-  
clensions of  
substantives.

According to the 1st paradigm (законъ) are declined nounsFirst declension.  
in 5 (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*Г, К, Х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*Л*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Баранъ, the ram. <i>G. барана</i> .	Даръ, the gift, <i>G. дара</i> ; <i>N. ф. дары</i> .
Вертепъ, the cavern, вертепа.	Долгъ, the debt, <i>добра</i> ; <i>долги</i> .
Кумиръ, an idol, <i>кумира</i> .	Чинъ, a rank, <i>чина</i> ; <i>чины</i> .
Волхвъ, the magician, <i>волхва</i> .	Шаръ, a ball, <i>шара</i> ; <i>шары</i> .
Врагъ, the enemy, <i>врага</i> .	Богъ, a god; <i>N. ф. ботъ</i> , <i>G. боговъ</i> .
Языкъ, the tongue, <i>языка</i> .	Воръ, a robber; <i>воры</i> , <i>воровъ</i> .
Птицъ, a cock, <i>птицы</i> .	Гробъ, a coffin; <i>гробы</i> , <i>гробовъ</i> .
Месяцъ, a month, <i>месяца</i> .	Дубъ, an oak; <i>дубы</i> , <i>дубовъ</i> .
Кузнецъ, the blacksmith, <i>кузнецъ</i> .	Волкъ, the wolf; <i>волки</i> , <i>волковъ</i> .

According to the 2d paradigm (отецъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *e* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *e* into *о* after the consonant *л*, and into *й* after a vowel. Such are:

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLENS

		S I N G U					
		Nominat. and Vocab.		Genitive.		Dat.	Accus.
DECLINATIONS.	TERMINATIONS.	PARADIGMS :	1.	законъ, the law . . .	закон-а	у . . .	
			2.	отецъ, the father . . .	отец-а	у . . .	
			3.	шалашъ, a cabin . . .	шалаш-а	у . . .	
			4.	телёнокъ, a calf . . .	телёнк-а	у . . .	
			5.	дворянинъ, a gentleman . . .	дворянин-а	у . . .	
			6.	геройъ, the hero . . .	геро-я	ю . . .	
			7.	соловейъ, a nightingale . . .	соловь-я	ыю . . .	
			8.	генийъ, a genius . . .	гени-я	ю . . .	
			9.	корольъ, the king . . .	корол-я	ю . . .	
			10.	огньъ, the fire . . .	огн-я	ю . . .	
SECOND.			11.	слово, a word . . .	слово-а	у . . .	
			12.	стекло, the glass . . .	стекла-а	у . . .	
			13.	колечко, small ring . . .	колечк-а	у . . .	
			14.	море, the sea . . .	мор-я	ю . . .	
			15.	ружъ, a gun . . .	руж-я	ыю . . .	
			16.	мнѣніе, an opinion . . .	мнѣні-я	ю . . .	
			17.	дѣтище, a great child . . .	дѣтищ-а	у . . .	
			18.	время, the time . . .	время-и	и . . .	
THIRD.			19.	корова, a cow . . .	коров-ы	и . . .	у . . .
			20.	палка, a stick . . .	палк-и	и . . .	у . . .
			21.	вожжи, a bridle . . .	вожж-и	и . . .	у . . .
			22.	недѣля, the week . . .	недѣл-и	и . . .	ю . . .
			23.	пѣсня, a song . . .	пѣсн-и	и . . .	ю . . .
			24.	свал, a pile . . .	свал-и	и . . .	ю . . .
			25.	судья, the judge . . .	судя-и	и . . .	ыю . . .
			26.	мѣднія, a lightning . . .	мѣдн-и	и . . .	ю . . .
			27.	страсть, a passion . . .	страст-и	и . . .	и . . .
			28.	ложъ, the lie . . .	лож-и	и . . .	ложъ

like {the *Nom.*, in the names of inanimate beings.  
the *Gen.*, in the names of animate beings.

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.

2. In the 3d declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

## SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

## L A R.

## P L U R A L.

<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>	<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive. Dative. Accus. Instrum. Prep.</i>	<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>
· омъ . . . ъ . . .	закон-ы . . . овъ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	отц-ы . . . ѿвъ . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёмн . . . ёхъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	шалаш-ы . . . ѿй . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёмн . . . ёхъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	телат-а . . . ѿ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· омъ . . . ъ . . .	дворян-е . . . ѿ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· емъ . . . ъ . . .	геро-и . . . ѿвъ . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ёёмъ . . . ъв . . .	солов-ый . . . ѿвъ . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёахъ . . .
· емъ . . . и . . .	гéní-и . . . ѿвъ . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	корол-ый . . . ѿй . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёхъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	огн-ый . . . ѿй . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёхъ . . .
· омъ . . . ъ . . .	слов-а . . . ѿ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· ёмъ . . . ъ . . .	стёкл-а . . . стёкол-ъ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· омъ . . . ъ . . .	колбч-и . . . колечек-ъ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· емъ . . . ъ . . .	мор-ы . . . ѿй . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ёёмъ . . . ъв . . .	рúж-ья . . . ѿй . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёахъ . . .
· емъ . . . и . . .	мнёвн-я . . . ѿй . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· емъ . . . ъ . . .	дётнц-и . . . ѿ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· енёмъ . . . ени	вреч-енá . . . ѿнъ . . . еножъ . . .	· енамн . . . енахъ . . .
· ою . . . ъ . . .	короб-ы . . . ѿ . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· ою . . . ъ . . .	пáлок-и . . . пáлок-ъ . . . ачъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· ёю . . . ъ . . .	вóзж-и . . . ѿй . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .
· ею . . . ъ . . .	недváл-и . . . ѿ . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ею . . . ъ . . .	пáсн-и . . . пáсен-ъ . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ею . . . ъ . . .	свá-и . . . ѿй . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ёёю . . . ъв . . .	сúд-ыи . . . ѿй . . . ёмъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёахъ . . .
· ею . . . и . . .	мблн-и . . . ѿй . . . ямъ . . .	· ямн . . . яхъ . . .
· ю . . . и . . .	страст-и . . . ѿй . . . ёчъ . . .	· ёамн . . . ёхъ . . .
· лóжю . . . лжи	лж-и . . . ѿй . . . амъ . . .	· амн . . . ахъ . . .

like { the *Nominative*, in the names of inanimate beings,  
the *Genitive*, in the names of animate beings.

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III<sup>d</sup> declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *а* and *и*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *и*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орёлъ, an eagle, *G.* орлъ.  
 Ковёръ, a carpet, ковра.  
 Крючокъ, a hook, крючка.  
 Левъ, a lion, льва.  
 Кулёкъ, a sack, кулька.  
 Ильмъ, the elm-tree, ильма.  
 Конёкъ, a skate, конька.  
 Боецъ, a wrestler, бойца.  
 Заяцъ (and заяцъ), a hare, зайца.  
 Овёкъ, a calf's skin, опёка.

Багбръ, a book, *G.* багра.  
 Посолъ, an ambassador, посолъ.  
 Лобъ, the forehead, лба.  
 Псаломъ, a psalm, псалмъ.  
 Ротъ, the mouth, рта.  
 Участокъ, a portion, участка.  
 Сонъ, sleep, сна.  
 Уголъ, an angle, углъ.  
 Замокъ, a castle, замка.  
 Замбъкъ, a lock, замка.

According to the 3d paradigm (шалашъ) are declined such nouns in 3 with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Падежъ, the case, *G.* падежа.  
 Платежъ, the payment, платежа.  
 Моржъ, a walrus, моржъ.  
 Ежъ, a hedgehog, ежа.  
 Ключъ, the key, ключа.  
 Лучъ, a ray, луча.  
 Кирпичъ, a brick, кирпича.  
 Мечъ, a sword, меча.

Палашъ, the sabre, *G.* палаша.  
 Ландышъ, the mayflower, ландыша.  
 Карандашъ, a pencil, карандаша.  
 Торгашъ, the mercer, торгаша.  
 Плащъ, a mantle, плаща.  
 Лещъ, the bream, леща.  
 • Товарищъ, a comrade, товарища.  
 Овощъ, a fruit, овоща.

According to the 4th paradigm (телёнокъ) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in ёнокъ, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ама* (or *ама* after *ов* and *у*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнёночъ, a lamb; *N. pl.* ягнёта.  
 Жеребёнокъ, a foal, жеребята.  
 Цыплёнокъ, a pullet, цыплята.  
 Поросёнокъ, a little pig; поросята.  
 Котёнокъ, a kitten; котята.  
 Ребёнокъ, a child; ребята

Осленокъ, a young ass; *N. pl.* ослята.  
 Волченокъ, a wolf's cub; волчата.  
 Медвежёнокъ, a bear's cub; медвежата.  
 Львёнокъ, a lion's whelp; *N. pl.* львёнки.  
 Галчёнокъ, a young awl; галчёнки.  
 Мишёнокъ, a young mouse; мышёнки.

Also щенокъ, a pup, *G.* щенка, *N. pl.* щенята and щенки.

According to the 5th paradigm (дворянинъ) are declined nouns in *янинъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е*, *з*, *ам*, &c.; such are:

Селянинъ, a villager; *N. pl.* селяне. Мирянинъ, a layman, *N. pl.* миряне.  
 Крестьянинъ, a peasant; крестьяне. Поселянинъ, a husbandman; посе-  
 ляне.

Семья́нинъ, the head of a family; Огн́ящанинъ, a freeman; *N. ꙗ. огн́и-щане.*

*N. ꙗ. семьяне.*

Россиянинъ, a Russian; Россияне.

Гражданинъ, a citizen; граждáне.

Мыщанинъ, a burgher; мыщáне.

Христиа́нинъ, a Christian; христиа́не.

Бо́ринъ, a lord; бо́аре.

Болгари́нъ, a Bulgarian; Болгаре.

According to the 6th paradigm (герой) are declined the nouns in *й*, with the exception of those in *ий* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms.\* Such are:

Покой, a room, *G. покой*

Лишай, a scab, *G. лишай*.

Злодей, a wretch, злодéя.

Пай, a part, пай.

Казначéй, a treasurer, казначéл.

Бой, the combat, *G. бой*; *N. ꙗ. бой*.

Сарай, a coach-house, сарáя.

Рой, a swarm, рóя; рой.

Слúчай, the occasion, слúчая.

Строй, the rank, стрóя; строй.

Налой, a desk, налóя.

Чай, the tea, чáя; чай.

According to the 7th paradigm (оловéй) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *о* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *ий*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробéй, a sparrow, *G. воробóй*

Чáрбéй, a furuncle, *G. чáрья*.

Муравéй, an ant, муравéя.

Васíлéй, Basil, Васíлья.

Ручéй, a brook, ручéя.

Григóрéй, Gregory, Григóрья.

Репéй, a little ribbon, репéя.

Левонtéй, Leontius, Левонtья.

Ульeй, a bee-hive, улья.

Прокóфéй, Procopius, Прокóфья.

Жéребéй, the lot, жéребья.

Игнáтéй, Ignatius, Игнáтья.

According to the 8th paradigm (гéний) are declined such nouns in *ий*, as take the inflection *u* (instead of *о*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Викáрéй, a vicar, *G. викáрія*.

Виночéрпéй, a cup-bearer, *G. вино-*

Инвентáрéй, an inventory, инвентáрія.

чéрпія.

Комментáрéй, a commentary, -мен- Меркúрій, Mercury, Меркúрія.

тáрія.

Сéрпíй, Sergius, Сéрпія.

Some substantives in *й*, as портнóй, a tailor; кóрмчíй, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (король) are declined the masculine nouns in *о*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жёлудь, an acorn, *G. жёлудя*.

Госудáрь, a sovereign, *G. госудáрія*.

Колбóдезь, a well, колбóдезя.

Олéни, a stag, олéни.

Учíтель, the teacher, учíтеля.

Медвéдь, a bear, медвéдя.

Соболь, a sable, соболя.

Царь, a king, царé.

Слéсарь, a lock-smith, слéсаря.

Корáбль, a vessel, корáблі.

Фонарь, a lantern, *G. фонарь*.

Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.

Фитиль, a match, *фитиль*.

Зверь, a beast; звери, зверей.

Гусь, a goose; *N. ф. гусь*, *G. гусёй*.

Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огонь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, *G. камень*.

Корень, the root, *N. ф. корень*, *G. корней*.

Стебель, a stem, *стебль*.

Угорь, an eel, *угорь*, *угрёй*.

Лапоть, a bast shoe, *лапти*.

Ноготь, a nail; *ногти*, *ногтей*.

Ремень, a thong, *ремни*.

Коготь, a claw; *когти*, *когтей*.

Кремень, a flint, *кремни*.

Перстень, a ring; *перстни*, *перстней*.

Ломоть, a slice, *ломти*.

Локоть, the elbow; *локти*, *локтей*.

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (слово) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *це*, *же*, *че* and *ще* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *це* and augmentatives in *це*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, щ, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the II<sup>d</sup> declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

Тело, the body, *G. тело*; *N. ф. тела*.

Лицо, the face, *G. лицо*; *N. ф. лица*.

Стадо, a herd, *стада*; *стада*.

Яйцо, an egg, *яйца*; *яйца* (*G. яйцо*).

Зеркало, a mirror, *зеркала*; *зеркала*.

Плечо, the shoulder, *плечи*; *плечи*.

Озеро, a lake, *озера*; *озёра*.

Ложе, the couch, *G. and N. ф. ложа*.

Вино, the wine, *вино*; *вино*.

Вече, an assembly, *веча*.

Село, a village, *села*; *сёла*.

Жилище, a dwelling, *жилища*.

Колесо, a wheel, *колеса*; *колёса*.

Зрелище, a spectacle, *зрелища*.

Долото, a chisel, *долота*; *долота*.

Сокровище, a treasure, *сокровища*.

Чадо, *m.* a child, *G. and N. ф. чада*.

Гульбище, a promenade, *гульбища*.

Светило, a star, *светила*.

Училище, a school, *училища*.

Меняло, *m.* a changer, *меняла*.

Кладбище, a cemetery, *кладбища*.

According to the 12th paradigm (стекло) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *це* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *о* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Ребро, a rib; *N. ф. ребра*, *G. реберъ*.

Щемя, a vice, *N. ф. щёмы*, *G. щёмяль*.

Пятно, a spot; *пятна*,  *пятень*.

Сукно, cloth; *сукна*, *суконъ*.

Зерно, a grain; *зерна*,  *зернъ*.

Окно, the window; *окна*,  *оконъ*.

Брёвно, a beam; *N. pl.* брёвна, *G.* Число, a number; *N. pl.* числа, *G.* брёвна.

чиселъ (and число).

Письмо, a letter; письма, писемъ. Сéрдце, the heart; сердца, сердцъ.

Полотно, linen; полотна, полотенъ. Кольцо, a ring; кольца, кольцъ.

Сaddle, a saddle; съдла, съдль.

Крыльцо, a step; крыльца, крыльцъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *эdo*, *сто*, *ско* and *сmeo*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. Гнéздо, a nest; мéсто, a place; вóйско, an army; чу́вство, the feeling,—gen. plur. Гнéздъ, мéстъ, вóйскъ, чу́вствъ.

According to the 13th paradigm (колéчко) are declined the diminutives in *кo* and *ue*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *кo*) or in *и* (for those in *ue*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердечко, little heart; *pl.* сердечки, Донце, little bottom; *pl.* донцы, -дечекъ. [-тéчекъ.] донецъ.

Мéстéчко, little place; мéстéчки, Дульце, mouth piece; дульцы, Крыльшко, little wing; крыльшки, дульцъ.

-льшекъ. Рыльце, little snout; рыльцы, рыльцъ.

Домишко, little house; домишки, Полотенце, a towel; полотеницы, -чайшекъ. -тéнейцъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (мóре) are declined those nouns in *le* and *re*, which form their *genitive plural* in *eij*; e. g.

Пóле, the field; *G.* пóля, *N. pl.* полá, *G.* полéй.

Гóре, a grief; горя (not used in the plural).

According to the 15th paradigm (ружьё) are declined those nouns in *be* and in *ee*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *be* and *ee* into *eij*, and *be*, a contraction of *ie*, into *ij*. Such are:

Жильё, a floor; *pl.* жилья, *G.* жíлей. Плáтье, a coat, *G. pl.* плáтей.

Копьё, a lance; копья, копей.

Верхóвье, a spring, верхóвей.

Питьё, a beverage; питья, питьей.

Весéлье, an enjoyment, весéлый.

Лезвие, the edge; лéзвия, лéзвий.

Воскресéнье, Sunday, воскресéный.

Острéй, the point, edge; остряя, острей.

Повéрье, a belief, повéрый.

The following nouns in *be* form their genitive plural in *бесs*: подмастéрье *m.*, the journeyman; кúшанье, a dish; помéстье, a domain; ю́тье, mouth (of a river); варéнье, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (мнéниe) are declined nouns in *ie*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ij*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *и*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Заданіе, an edifice, <i>G.</i> and <i>N.</i> <i>ф.</i> заданія.	Оружие, an arm, <i>G.</i> and <i>N.</i> <i>ф.</i> оружія.
Знаніе, knowledge, знання.	Явленіе, an apparition, явлення. [інл.
Желаніе, the desire, желанія.	Сообщеніе, a communication, сообщеніе.
Понятіе, an idea, понятія.	Сомненіе, the doubt, сомненія.
Собрание, an assembly, собрания.	Владеніе, the possession, владенія.
Растеніе, a plant, растенія.	Созвездіе, a constellation, созвездія.

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *у*, *ей*, &c.; e. g.

Доми́ще, great house; <i>pl.</i> доми́щи, -щей.	Столи́ще, great table; <i>pl.</i> столи́щи, -щей.
Двори́ще, great court, двори́щи.	Козли́ще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; козли́щи.
Мужи́чще, <i>m.</i> big peasant, , мужи- чиши.	Поко́ище, great room; поко́иши.

Some substantives in *oe*, as живóтное, *an animal*; морóженое, *ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (*спéмá*) are declined nouns in *мá*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брёма, the burden, <i>N. pl</i> бремя.	Плэмя, the race, <i>N. pl</i> племя.
Вымьи, an udder, вымна.	Стрёма, the stirrup, стремена.
И́мя, the name, имена.	Тъ́ма, the sinciput, тъмена.
Плáмя, the flame (no <i>plural</i> ).	Знáмá, the flag, знамя and знамёна.

By the same paradigm is declined *съмѧ*, *seed*, *plur.* *съмѧна*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection *съмѧнь* (instead of *семѧнъ*), to be distinguished from the proper name *Семѧнъ*, *Simeon*.

According to the 19th paradigm (*копóба*) are declined the nouns in *a* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ä* into *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (*Г, К, Х; Ж, Ч, Ш*), and of *o* into *e* after the hissings and the lingual (*Ж, Ч, Ш; Ъ*), and also to remark that several nouns of the III<sup>d</sup> declension in *a* and *ä* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рыба, the fish, <i>G.</i> and <i>N.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>рыбы.</i>	Звездá, a star, <i>G.</i> <i>звезды</i> ; <i>N.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>звезды.</i>
Шляпа, a hat, <i>шляпы.</i>	Женá, the wife, <i>жены</i> ; <i>жёны.</i>
Побéда, victory, <i>побéды.</i>	Слугá, a servant, <i>слугá</i> ; <i>слуги.</i>
Рóза, a rose, <i>рóзы.</i>	Рéка, a river, <i>рéки</i> ; <i>реки.</i>
Кни́га, a book, <i>кни́ги.</i>	Водá, water, <i>G.</i> <i>воды</i> , <i>A.</i> <i>воду</i> , <i>N.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>воды.</i>
Собáка, a dog, <i>собáки.</i>	Зимá, winter, <i>зимы</i> , <i>зиму</i> ; <i>зимы.</i>
Мúха, a fly, <i>мúхи.</i>	Рукá, the hand, <i>рукá</i> , <i>рукú</i> ; <i>руки.</i>
Кóжа, the skin, <i>кóжи.</i>	Головá, the head, <i>головы</i> , <i>голову</i> ; <i>головы.</i>
Тúча, the cloud, <i>тúчи.</i>	Гру́ша, a pear, <i>гру́ши.</i>
Вдовá, a widow, <i>G.</i> <i>вдовы</i> ; <i>N.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>Сковородá</i> , a frying pan, <i>сковороду</i> , <i>-роды.</i>	

According to the 20th paradigm (пáлка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *b* or *ü*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *b* and *ü* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Лóжка, the spoon; <i>G.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>лóжекъ.</i>	Кóймá, the hem; <i>G.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>коёмъ.</i>
Сóсна, the fir; <i>сóсень.</i>	Копéйка, a copeck; <i>копéекъ.</i>
Сkáзка, a tale; <i>скáзокъ.</i>	Рáйна, a ship's yard; <i>райенъ.</i>
Шáпка, a cap; <i>шáпокъ.</i>	Сváдьба, the marriage; <i>сvадебъ.</i>
У́тка, a duck; <i>утокъ.</i>	Судьбá, fate; <i>N.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>судьбы</i> , <i>G.</i> <i>судёбъ.</i>
Овцá, a sheep; <i>A.</i> <i>овцу</i> , <i>G.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>овéцъ.</i>	Тюрьмá, the prison; <i>тюрьмы</i> , <i>тюрёмъ.</i>
Доскá, a plank; <i>доску</i> , <i>досóкъ.</i>	Сергá, an ear-ring; <i>сéрги</i> , <i>серёгъ.</i>

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in *juxta-position* can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: *просьба*, *the demand*; *стáрооста*, *a bailliif*; *верстá*, *a werst*; *жéртва*, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: *просьбъ*, *стáрость*, *вёрстъ*, *жéртвъ*. The *genitive plural* of *войнá*, *war*, is *войнъ*, and that of *тáйна*, *a sacrament*, is *тáинъ*.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжá) are declined nouns in *оса*, *ча*, *ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжá, a bigot; <i>G.</i> <i>pl.</i> <i>ханжéй.</i>	Лéвшиá, a left-handed person; <i>G.</i> <i>pl.</i>
Парчá, brocade; <i>парчéй.</i>	Вéкша, a squirrel; <i>вéкшей</i> . [лéвшей].
Прáтча, a proverb; <i>прáтчей.</i>	Рóща, a grove; <i>рóщей.</i>
Каланчá, a belfry; <i>каланчéй.</i>	Толщá, the thickness; <i>толщéй.</i>

In the same manner are declined *юноша*, *young man*, and *пашá*, *a pacha*, *G.* *pl.* *юношей* and *пашéй*.

According to the 22th paradigm (недéля) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*

in *ə*, with the exception of some which form it in *eū*, and others in *ə* and *eū*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; <i>G. pl.</i> бань.	Дядя, the uncle; <i>G. pl.</i> дядей.
Пуля, a ball; пуль.	Броня, a cuirass; броней.
Буря, a tempest; бурь.	Пёны, a fine; пёней.
Гиря, a weight; гирь.	Ноздря, a nostril; ноздрёй.
Дыня, a melon; дынь.	Срезай, a footpath; стезёй.
Богиня, a goddess; богинь.	Доля, a portion; долей and доль.
Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.	Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.
Потёра, a loss, потёры.	Тоня, fishing-net; тонёй and тонь.

According to the 23th paradigm (песня) are declined the nouns in *яя* and *иа*, preceded by another consonant, by *ə* or by *ū*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *ə* (one single noun takes the vowel *o*), or change *ə* and *ū* into *e*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; <i>G. pl.</i> сабель	Объядня, the mass; <i>G. pl.</i> объядень.
Басня, a fable, басень	Кухня, the kitchen, кухонь.
Башня, a tower; башень.	Спальня, a dormitory; спалень. [лень.
Дерёвня, a village; дерёвень.	Богадельня, an 'almshouse; богадель.
Кровля, a roof; кровель	Швальня, a sewing room; швальень.
Шёлля, a running-knot; пётель.	Бойня, a slaughter-house; бойень.
Земля, the earth, земель ( <i>A. s.</i> землю).	Водопойня, a horse-pond; водопойень.

The substantive *земля* takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землю*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землю*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свáя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *иа*), which form their *genitive plural* in *ū*; such are:

Выя, the neck; <i>G. pl.</i> вый.	The names of foreign towns, ending in <i>оа</i> and <i>уа</i> , are declined in the same manner, except in the <i>accusative</i> , which they form in <i>у</i> (and not in <i>ю</i> ); e. g.
Лядвей, the hip; лядвей.	Генуя, Genoa, <i>A.</i> Гéнну.
Струй, a current, струй.	Мантва, Mantua, Мантву.
Верей, a post; верей.	Падуя, Padua, Пáдуу.
Шея, the neck; шей.	Гоа, Goa, Гóу.
Змей, a serpent; змей.	
Сой, the Jay; сои	
я, an armour; сбруй.	

Some nouns in *ај* and *иј*, as: *кладовáя*, a *storehouse*; *преднáя*, an *antechamber*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судъя) are declined the nouns in *иј*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *еиј*, and if it is contracted from *иј*, into *иуј*. Such are:

Ладъ́й, a boat; *G. pl.* ладъ́й.  
Скамъ́й, a bench; скамъ́й.  
Стать́й, an article; статъ́й.  
Свинъ́й, a pig; свинъ́й.  
Семъ́й, the family; семъ́й.

Гость́й, a female guest; *G. pl.* гость́й.  
Лгунъ́й, a female liar; лгунъ́й.  
Свата́й, a female relation; сватъ́й.  
Кель́й, a cell; кель́й.  
Игуме́нья, an abbess; игуме́нья.

According to the 26th paradigm (мольни́я) are declined the nouns in *иа*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *и*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *ий*. Such are:

А́рмия, an army, <i>D.</i> а́рмии; <i>G. pl.</i>	Стихия, an element, <i>D.</i> стихии; <i>G. pl.</i>
армии.	стихий.
Копи́я, a copy, копи́; копи́й.	Коме́дия, a comedy, коме́дии; коме́дий.
Ли́лия, a lily, ли́лия; ли́лий.	Траге́дия, a tragedy, траге́дии; траге́дий.
Лини́я, a line, лини́я; лини́й.	Вити́я, an orator, вити́; вити́й.

According to the 27th paradigm (страстъ) are declined the feminine nouns in *и*, observing at the same time the change of *и* into *а* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Ткань, a tissue; <i>G. pl.</i> ткане́й.	Бровь, an eyebrow; <i>N. pl.</i> бро́вь, <i>G.</i>
Печать, a seal; печате́й.	брове́й.
Кровать, a bedstead; кровате́й.	Кисть, a tuft; кисти, кисте́й.
Ель, a fir; ель.	Ветвь, a branch, ветви, ветве́й.
Сырьль, a pipe; сырь́лей.	Дверь, the door; двере́й ( <i>I.</i> дверьми).
Ладонь, the palm of the hand; ладо́ней.	Лошадь, a horse; лошаде́й ( <i>I.</i> дьми́).
Осень, the autumn; осене́й.	Плеть, a whip; плете́й ( <i>I.</i> плетьми́).
Мечеть, a mosque; мече́тей.	Ночь, the night, но́чей; <i>D.</i> но́чамъ
Болезнь, a malady; боле́зней.	Печь, a stove, пе́чей; пе́чамъ
Доброте́ль, virtue; доброде́телей.	Мышь, a mouse, мышь́ей; мышамъ
	Вещь, a thing, ве́щей; ве́щамъ

According to the 28th paradigm (ложь) are declined five nouns in *и*, which elide the vowel *и* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Во́ши, a louse, <i>G.</i> вши, <i>I.</i> во́шью.	Любовь, love, <i>G.</i> любо́вь, <i>I.</i> любо́вью
Рожь, rye, ржь, рожью	Церковь, the church, церкви, церковью

The noun церковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амъ*, *ами*, *ахъ*: церквамъ, церквами, церквахъ. Любовь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G.* Любови, &c.

Irregular nouns.

31. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *з* and *ö* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *á*, *å*, with the tonic accent (instead of *и*, *ü*), while the genitive remains in *оëз*, *оëз*, *еëй*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Бéрегъ, the shore, <i>pl.</i> берегá, берегóвъ.	Пóгребъ, a cellar, <i>pl.</i> погребá, -бóвъ.
Бóкъ, the flank, бóкá.	Пóлогъ, a curtain, пологá.
Бéчерь, the evening, вечера.	Прóфессоръ, a professor, профессорá.
Гóлосъ, the voice, голосá.	Рукáвъ, a sleeve, рукавí.
Гóродъ, the town, города.	Флóгеръ, a weathervane, флюгерá.
Дóкторъ, a doctor, докторá.	Шóмполъ, a ramrod, шомполá.
Жéрновъ, a millstone, жерновá.	Хлéвъ, a stall, хлéвá.
Кáтеръ, a cutter, катерá.	Холодъ, the cold, холодá.
Кáверъ, a shako, кивера.	Сбóржъ, a guard, сторожá, сторожéй.
Клóкотъ, a bell, колокола.	Вéксель, a bill of exchange, -ль, -лей.
Кýчерь, a coachman, кучерá.	Вéнзель, a monogram, вензелéй.
Лугъ, a meadow, лугá.	Егеръ, a hunter, егерí.
Лвсъ, a forest, лвса.	Крéдиль, a cracknel, крендель.
Мáстеръ, a master, мастерá.	Лéкарь, a surgeon, лекáрь.
Мáчманъ, a midshipman, мачманá.	Пíсарь, a writer, писáрь.
О'стровъ, an island, островá.	Флíгель, wing of a house, флигель.
Пáрусь, a sail, парусá.	Штéмпель, a stamp, штэмпель.
Пóваръ, a cook, поварá.	Я'корь, an anker, якорí.

In the same manner тéтеревъ, a *grouse*, has in *N. pl.* тетеревá; but in the genitive тетеревéй (instead of тетеревéбъ).

2. Some nouns in *з*, *ö*, *о*, form their *plural* in *ыз*, *ызз*, *ылмъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *и* into *иц* and *и*. Such are:

Братъ, the brother, <i>pl.</i> браты, -евъ.	Прутъ, a twig, <i>pl.</i> пруты, прутьевъ.
Брусь, a beam, брусья.	Полозъ, a slide, полозы.
Клинъ, a wedge, клинья.	Стуль, a chair, стулья.
Ключъ, a lock, ключы.	Зять, son-in-law, зять.
Колосъ, an ear, колосья.	Звенб, a link, звенья.
Коль, a stake, колья.	Крылб, a wing, крылья.
Комъ, a heap, комы.	Перб, a feather, перья.
Копыль, a sledge-bar, копылья.	Полбно, a billet of wood, поленья.
Кочанъ, a head of cabbage, кочаны.	Помельб, a malkin, помелья.
Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубы.	Шильо, an awl, шилья.

3. Some nouns in *з* have their *genitive plural* like the *nominative singular* (instead of *ов*), e. g.

Алтынъ, three copecks; <i>pl.</i> алтыны, алтынъ.	Рекрутъ, a recruit; <i>pl.</i> рекрутъ, рекрутъ.
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ.	Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.
Гренадёръ, a grenadier; гренадёры, -дёры.	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ.
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, драгунъ.	Турокъ, a Turk; Туры, Турукъ.
Пудъ a pood; пуды, пудъ.	Уланъ, a hulans; уланы, уланъ.
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ.	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыгани, цыганъ.
	Чулокъ, a stocking; чулки, чулокъ.
	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины, Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly *пять пудовъ, five poods*; *несколько рекрутъ, some recruits*. The substantive *человѣкъ, man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as *пять человѣкъ, five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. *друзыя человѣковъ, the friends of the men* — The substantive *саженъ, a toise*, has likewise in the genitive plural *саженъ*, the accent being transposed; and *день, the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. *семь дніевъ, seven days* (instead of *семь дніев*).

#### 4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *а*, *и*, *амъ*, &c. — глаза, глазъ, глазимъ; волосъ, Волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly волосы).

Баринъ, a lord, Господинъ, master, { change *и* into *а*, *и*, *амъ*, *ами*, *ахъ*: бара, барь, Татаринъ, a Tartar, { барамъ; господи, господъ, господамъ; Татара (and Татары), Татарь, Татарамъ, &c.

Хозинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяева, хозяинъ, хозяевамъ, &c.

Шуринъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурый, шурьёвъ, шурьамъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, Князъ, a prince, Мужъ, a husband, { have their plural in *ы*, *ий*, *ымъ*, &c. (другъ changes *и* into *ы*). дружи, друзей, друзыамъ; князъ, князей; мужи, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*, is regular: мужи, мужей, мужамъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. Сватъ, a kinsman, Сынъ, the son, { form their plural in the same way by inserting the syllable *овъ*: кумовыи, кумовей; сватовыи, сватовей; сыновыи, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* meaning, is regular: сыны, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, Холбѣнъ, a bondman, Чёртъ, the devil, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и*, *ий*, *амъ*, &c.. сосѣди,сосѣдъ,сосѣдамъ (and also regular: сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холбѣни, холбѣней; чёрти,чертѣй,чертамъ, &c.

Солнце, the sun, О'блако, a cloud, Очкъ, a pip, point, Ушко, a handle, { take the masculine termination: *ы*, *еевъ*, *амъ*, or *и*, *овъ*, *амъ*, &c.: солнцы, солнцевъ; облаки, облаковъ (and also regular: облака, облакъ); очки, очковъ; уши, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, Яблоко, an apple, { form their plural in *и*, *и*, *амъ*, &c.: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ; яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ)

Нéбо, heaven, Чудо, a wonder,	have in the plural небеса, небесъ, небесамъ; чудеса, чудесъ, чудесамъ, &c. Нéбо, in the sense of <i>palate</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying a <i>monster</i> , is re- gular: чуда, чудъ, чудамъ, &c.
О'ко, the eye, У'хо, the ear,	form their plural in <i>и</i> , <i>ы</i> , <i>ам</i> , with the permutation of the consonant очи, очы, очамъ, очамы; уши, ушы, ушамъ, ушамы (instead of <i>ушамы</i> ). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual, the plural, which is some- times used in poetry, is очеса, ушеса
Дитя, a child,	which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian de- clension <i>G. D.</i> and <i>P.</i> дитяти, <i>I.</i> дитятемъ and дитятею, has in plural <i>N.</i> дити, <i>G.</i> and <i>A.</i> дити, <i>D.</i> дитяты, <i>I.</i> дитяты, <i>P.</i> о дитятахъ

Курица, a hen, *plur.* куры, куръ, курамъ, &c

Слюна, the slaver, *plur.* слюни, слюней, слюнамъ, &c., with the soft in-  
flexion.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the *\*plural*, the  
one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and  
without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вéкъ, an age, *pl.* вéки and вéка, Поясъ, girdle, *pl.* поясы and пояса,  
вéковъ. -сéвъ

Годъ, a year, гóды and года, годовъ Рогъ, a horn, рóги and рога, роговъ

Домъ, a house, дóмы and дома, домовъ Снéгъ, snow, снéги and снега,

Корпусъ, body, кóрпусы and корпуса, снеговъ  
-сóвъ

Кúполъ, cupola, кúполы and купола, Стогъ, a stack, стóги and стога,  
-мóвъ. -стоговъ

Мéдъ, honey, мéды and меда, медовъ Стругъ, a bark, стру́ги and струга,  
-гóвъ. [-мóвъ]

О'корокъ, a ham, бокорки and окорока, Тéремъ, a room, тéремы and терема,  
-овъ Край, the brink, край and край, краевъ

b) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the  
irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a col-  
lective meaning; such are:

Батóгъ, a stick, *pl.* батоги, батоговъ, and батожья, батожьевъ, &c.

Внукъ, the grandson, внукы, внуковъ, and внучата, внучать, &c

Крюкъ, a hook, крюк, крюковъ, and крючья, крючевъ

Ободъ, a fellow, ободы, ободовъ, and ободья, ободьевъ.

Лóскутъ, a shred, лóскуты, лóскутовъ, and лóскутья, лóскутьевъ

Струпъ, a scurf; стру́пы, стру́повъ, and стру́пья, стру́пьевъ

Сучъ, a branch, сúки, сúковъ, and сúчья, сúчьевъ

Чéренъ, a potsherd, черепи, чéреновъ, and чéренья, чéреньевъ.

Волдыръ, *m.* a tubercle; волдырь, волдырёй, and волдыры, волдырьевъ

Камень, *m.* a stone; камни, камней, and каменьевъ.

Корень, *m.* a root; корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.

Пузырь, *m.* a bladder; пузырь, пузырь, and пузырья, пузырьевъ.

Пузырь, *m.* a pimple; пузырь, пузырь, and пузырья, пузырьевъ.

Уголь, *m.* the charcoal; угли, углей, and уголья, угольевъ.

Дерево, *a tree*; деревя, деревъ, and деревья, деревьевъ.

Дырка, *a hole*; дыры, дыръ, and дырки, дырьевъ.

Щель, *f.* a chink; щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with *totally different meanings*; such are:

Зубъ, *a tooth* (in the mouth), *pl.* зубы, зубовъ, and *tooth* (of a saw), зубъ, зубьевъ.

Капля, *a drop* (of water), капли, капель, and *drops* (in medicine), капли, каплей.

Листъ, *a leaf* (of paper), листы, листовъ, and *a leaf* (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, *a man*, мужи, мужей, and *a husband*, мужъ, мужей.

Мехъ, *a fur*; мехи, меховъ, and *a pair of bellows*, мехи, меховъ.

Образъ, *the form*, образы, образовъ, and *an image*, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, *a motive*, поводы, поводовъ, and *a rein*, поводья, поводьевъ.

Судно, *a vessel* (utensil), судны, суденъ, and *a vessel* (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлѣбъ, *a bread*, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and *a corn*, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.

Цвѣтъ, *a flower*, цветы, цветовъ, and *a colour*, цвета, цветовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { *a tribe*, *pl.* колѣна, колѣнъ, колѣнамъ, &c.  
the knee, *pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнамъ, &c.  
a joint (of a plant), *pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямъ, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господь, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *s*, with the hard inflection  
G. Господа, D. Господу, I. Господомъ; the *vocative*  
is: Господи.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *os*: G. Христъ,  
D. Христу, I. Христомъ, R. о Христѣ, V. Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *er*.  
Мать, the mother, { G. and D. дочери and мѣтери, I. дочерью and мѣтерью,  
plur. N. дочери and мѣтери, G. дочерей and мѣтерей,  
I. дочерьми and мѣтерами, &c.

Пламень, flame, { although masculine, take in the *genitive*, *dative* and  
Путь, the way, { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и* · пламени,  
путь; but the *instrumental* case is regular (пламенемъ,  
путемъ).

EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF  
SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.  
and  
Genitive. Хозяинъ садъ и хозяйка домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.  
Садъ хозяинъ и домъ хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the  
Рыканіе левъ; пѣніе соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing  
мычаніе быкъ, волъ и корова; ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;  
лошадь *f*; лай собака; воркованіе голубь *m*;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling  
карканье воронъ; кваканіе лягушка; вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and  
волкъ; жужжаніе пчела, жукъ и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney  
муха; блейніе баранъ и овца. Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;  
безъ огонь *m*; окно безъ стекло; каша безъ

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and  
свѣдо безъ стрѣмъ; зарядъ безъ пуль; островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without  
лугъ безъ дѣрево; поваръ, кучерь и рабочникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;  
работа; дитя безъ мать; солдатъ безъ ружьѣ;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without  
ружьѣ безъ кременъ *m*; статуя безъ рукъ и безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels  
ухо; медвѣдя и львѧнокъ безъ шерстъ *f*; корабль *m*

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and  
безъ койка; судно безъ весло; чай безъ сахара и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates  
безъ сливки. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка  
and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;  
но стаканъ; сотня форель; десятокъ дыни;  
a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;  
множество гусь т., утка и лебедь т.; стадо скотъ;  
studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands  
табунъ лошадь. Мужъ дреность и мужъ  
of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours  
женя. Цветъ садъ и цветъ  
of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.  
радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.  
The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes  
Зубъ во (prep.) ротъ и зубъ у грбень т. Колено  
of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.  
Израильянинъ, колено у человкъ, и колено растеніе.  
The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very  
Ловъ сельдь т. у берегъ Америка былъ очень  
profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and  
выгоденъ для (gen.) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и  
the French.  
Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. Nominate and Dative.  
Совѣтъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ.

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give  
Приказъ войско. Повиновеніе законъ. Дай  
food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the  
есть гусь т., курица, голубь т. и  
little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour.  
щенокъ. Поступать соответственно правилу честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well  
Жить прилично состояніе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes  
 дворянинъ, такъ и мѣщанинъ. Противиться желаніе  
 of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books,  
 дитя, и воля родитель. Книга,  
 the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not  
 перо и тетрадь *f* принадлежать ученикъ, а не  
 to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the  
 учитель. Полье и лугъ принадлежать  
 father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests  
 отецъ и мать, а садъ, какъ и лесъ,  
 to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men  
 сынъ и дочь. Нравиться мужчина  
 and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable  
 и не нравиться женщина. Зелень *f* нравится  
 to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers  
 глазъ. Картина нравится сестра, а цветъ  
 the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and  
 братъ. Полезный отчество; приятный Богъ и  
 to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable  
 люди; верный государь; любезный другъ; милый  
 to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by  
 дитя. Человѣкъ узнается по лицѣ, по голосу, по  
 his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists  
 ростъ, по походка и по тѣлодвиженіе. Туристъ  
 travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany,  
 путешествуютъ по Швейцарія, Франція, Италія, Германія,  
 in America and in Egypt.  
 Америка а Египетъ.

native The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and  
 d. Братъ купили домъ, садъ, деревня и  
 stive. fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage.  
 Полье, а продали быкъ, корова, лошадь *f*, и карета.

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play *an air*,  
 Читать басни, рисовать картину, писать письмо, играть пасни,  
 mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers  
 чинить перо. Посещать братья и сестры, матерь  
 and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat  
 и дочь, отец и сын. Купить шляпа  
 and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.  
 и шапка, перчатка и башмакъ, чулокъ и подвязка.  
 The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected  
 Завоеватель победилъ войско, и покорилъ  
 the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia  
 народъ. Петръ разбилъ Шведъ, завоевалъ Эстляндія  
 and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised  
 и Лифляндія, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ  
 Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,  
 Россія. Россіянинъ побѣждали Татаринъ, Турокъ,  
 the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh  
 Шведъ, Французъ и Персіянинъ. Дождь *и* освѣжаетъ  
 the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.  
 землю, и холодъ истребляютъ саранча (sing.).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.  
 Дитя, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воинъ,  
 fight gallantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,  
 сражайтесь храбро! Богъ, спаси (acc.) Царь! Господь,  
 have mercy upon me!  
 помилуй меня!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or *and* with a pen and Nominative  
 Ученикъ пишутъ грифель *и* или перо *и* <sup>and</sup> *Instrumental*.  
 ink. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary  
 чернила. Иванъ играеть съ Алексіемъ и съ Васілемъ, а Марья  
 plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;  
 играеть съ Софією и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ;

pots with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and  
 горицкъ съ цветъ; кадка съ водой; человѣкъ съ умъ и  
 of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and  
 съ гѣй; галерѣя съ картиной. Городъ съ крѣмль и  
 a port; trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with  
 гавань; дерево листъ, цветъ и плодъ; киверъ съ  
 plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with  
 султанъ; комната съ дверь; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ  
 wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with  
 вино съ водой; профессоръ съ ученикъ; письмо съ  
 money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and  
 дѣнги. Рисовать карандашъ, писать кисть и  
 colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk,  
 краска. Купецъ торгуется салом, мылом, молоком,  
 in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and  
 мука, крупа, вино, пиво, сукно, полотно и  
 in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen,  
 кружево, а сосѣдъ купецъ торгуется волем,  
 in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with  
 баранъ и лошадь. Дворецъ съ башня; церковь съ  
 steeples; houses with windows; buildings with galleries,  
 колокольня; домъ съ окном; зданіе съ галерѣей;  
 regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold,  
 полкъ съ знамя. Горы изобилуютъ золотом,  
 in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead.  
 серебро, мѣдь, желѣзо, ртуть и свинецъ.

Nominative and Prepositional. The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the  
 Басня о быкѣ и баранѣ, о вѣтѣ и  
 nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and  
 колобъ; о кузнецѣ и муравѣ; о дубѣ и  
 the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb.  
 тростникѣ; о лисице и воронѣ; о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; the Сказка объ ангель-хранитель, объ Иоанн и Марья; histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius. Повесть о Серафим пустынник; о герой и гений. To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of Говорить объ игр, объ урокъ, о врёмя, о месте, объ circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about обстоятельство. Въ сочинение говорять много о honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage честь и безчестие, о добродѣтель и порокъ, о храбрость and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and и малодушие. Въ водѣ живутъ рыба, лягушка и the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears, слизень; и въ лѣсѣ живутъ левъ, медведь, the foxes and the hares. лисица и зайцъ.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases. Книга ученикъ нравится (dat.) учитель. Свѣтъ of the sun illuminates the earth with its rays. The colours of солнце озаряетъ земля лучъ. Цвѣтъ the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity роза (суть) пріятны глазъ. Другъ человѣчество do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with дѣлаютъ добро люди. Въ (prep.) садѣ цвѣтутъ роза съ (prep.) thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children шипъ; ибо нѣтъ (gen.) роза безъ (instr.) шипъ. Дитя wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of умываются водѣ рѣкѣ. Стаканъ съ (instr.) water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten водѣ стоять на (prep.) столѣ комната. Слеза радость блестятъ in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is въ (prep.) глазъ мати. Слава злодѣй (есть)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine непродолжительна; но имена благодетель сияют in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in въ (prep.) вечность. Счастье на (prep.) земле состоять въ (prep.) tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people спокойствие духа и въ чистота совѣсть. Юноша love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river, любятъ пѣніе соловѣя, на (prep.) берегъ ручея, by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty при (prep.) свѣтъ луны. Говорить правда есть долгъ of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and дитя. Любить Бога сердце и душа. Муравей и the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion бобръ могутъ служить (instr.) примѣръ человѣку. Поѣзда to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room въ (acc.) Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ (acc.) библіотека of reading (reading-room). Give to the master the book для (gen.). чтеніе. Подай учитель тетрадь of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise со (instr.) стихъ на (acc.) слуѣчай праздникъ. Надобно вставать in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and (instr.) утро, работать день т, отдыхать вѣчерь, и sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells спать ночь. Громъ пушки и звонъ колоколь announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror возвѣстили гражданій о (prep.) прибытие побѣдитель of the enemies of the country.  
 врагъ отечество.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательные имена) in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественные) adjectives, as: *чёрный кафтанъ*, a *black coat*; *тихое дитя*, a *quiet child*; *весёлая жизнь*, a *joyous life*. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательные) adjectives, as: *отцёв сынъ*, *the father's son*; *лисья шкура*, a *fox skin*; *золотое кольцо*, a *gold ring*; *лътний садъ*, *the summer garden*. 3) The *numeral* (числительные) adjectives, as: *два стола*, *two tables*; *второй мѣсяцъ*, *the second month*.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as ex- press the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ий*, or, with the accent, in *оу* (neut. *oe* and *ee*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. *добрый*, *good*; *лѣгкій*, *light*; *синій*, *blue*; *сухо́й*, *dry*; *большо́й*, *great*.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личные, частные), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *о́въ*, *е́въ*, *и́нъ* and *у́нъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *въ* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *о* and *е* into *о́въ*

(or into *еъз* after the lingual or a hissing consonant); *и* and *ъ* into *еъз*; *а*, *я* and *ъ* into *иъз*, and *уа* into *уъиъз*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновъ*, *the son's*; *Мáрковъ*, *Mark's*; *Львовъ*, *Leon's*; *Христовъ*, *Christ's*; *стráжевъ*, *the guardian's*; *отцёвъ*, *the father's*; *Андрéевъ*, *Andrew's*; *царéвъ*, *the king's*; *Никитинъ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинъ*, *the uncle's*; *свекрóвинъ*, *mother-in-law's*; *мáтеринъ*, *the mother's*; *лъвицынъ*, *the girl's* (from *сынъ*, *Мáрко*, *Левъ*, gen. *Льва*, *Христосъ*, gen. *Христá*, *стразъ*, *отéцъ*, gen. *отцá*, *Андрéй*, *шаръ*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекрóвъ*, *матъ*, gen. *мáтери*, *дъвýша*). The termination *ъ* is only found in the adjective *Госпóдень*, *the Lord's* (from *Госпóдъ*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Я'ковлевъ*, *James's*; *брáтнинъ*, *the brother's*; *мýжнинъ*, *the husband's*; and also *Бóжий*, *God's*, formed from *Я'ковъ*, *брáтъ*, *мýжъ* and *Богъ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивáновичъ* and *Ивáновна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Пáвловичъ* and *Пáвловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Я'ковлевичъ* and *Я'ковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичъ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (óбщíя, родовýя) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *иъ*, *овий* or *евий* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скíй*, *ны́й*, *иный*, *овий*, *ни́й* (neut. *е* and *еъ*, fem. *я* and *яъ*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбíй*, *of a fish*; *медвéжíй*, *of a bear*; *птичíй*, *of*

*a bird*; *клопóвíй*, *of a bug*; *конéвíй*, *of a horse*; *скóтскíй*, *of cattle*; *гусíйный*, *of a goose*; *домóвый*, *domestic*; *паровóй*, *of steam*; *рéчнóй*, *fluvial*; *душéвный*, *of the soul*; *жíзнéнnyй*, *vital*; *сынóвníй*, *filial* (from *рыба*, *мeдвéдь*, *птица*, *клоп*, *конь*, *скот*, *гусь*, *дом*, *пар*, *рпка*, *душа*, *жизнь*, *сын*).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. *Дмитрéвъ*, *Пушкинъ*, *Завадóвский*, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. *Кáшинъ*, *Бородинó*, *Смолéнскъ*, &c.

3. The *material* (вещéственныя) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый*, *ный*, *яный*, *янный* (neut. *oe*, fem. *ая*), as: *золотóй*, *of gold*; *желéзный*, *of iron*; *серéбряный*, *of silver*; *деревéнnyй*, *of wood* (from *зóлото*, *жeлeзo*, *серебрó*, *дерeво*).

4. The *circumstantial* (обстóтельственныя) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *ний* (neut. *ee*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скíй* (neut. *oe*, fem. *ая*); as: *лéтний*, *of summer*; *нынéшний*, *actual*; *зíй*, *of this place*; *мáртовский*, *of March*; *жíй*, *of July* (from *лéтo*, *нынéль*, *тамъ*, *марть*,

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian are: the *gender* (родъ), the *number* (числó), the *case* (падéжъ), the *apocope of the termination* (усéчénie окончáния), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (стéпени качествъ), and

Properties of  
adjectives.

these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number, and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Apocope of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ*, *a good man*; *новая шляпа*, *a new hat*; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добръ*, *the man is good*; *шляпа была нова*, *the hat was new*; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one *full* (полное), the other *apocopated* (усточенное). These two terminations are as follows:

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Neuter.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
<i>Full term:</i>	ый (ой), ий;	ое,      е;	ая,      я;
<i>Apoc. term:</i>	ъ,           ь;	о,           е;	а,           я;
<i>Examples:</i>	{ <i>новый, синий; новое, синее; новая, синяя;</i>		
	{ <i>новъ, синъ; ново, синѣ; нова, синя;</i>		

PLURAL.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Neut. and Fem.</i>
<i>Full term:</i>	ые,      ie;	ыя,      из.
<i>Apoc. term:</i>	ы,           и;	ы,           и.
<i>Examples:</i>	{ <i>новые, синіе; новыя, синія;</i>	
	{ <i>новы, сини;</i>	

These two examples *новый, new*, and *синий, blue*, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ий*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ы* and *и*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine, and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *ö* and *ü* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

а, white, <i>afos. term.</i> <i>бълъ, лб, ля.</i>	<i>върнъ, true, afos. върнъ, рно, рна.</i>
здравый, wholesome, <i>здравъ, ово,</i>	<i>тажкъ, heavy, тажкъ, жко, жка.</i>
ова. е	<i>истиннъ, veritable, истиннъ, инио,</i>
дорогой, dear, <i>дорогъ, ого, ога.</i>	<i>инна.</i>
великій, great, <i>великъ, ико, ика.</i>	<i>дрѣннъ, ancient, дрѣвень, вие, виа.</i>
дѣжкій, stout, <i>дюжъ, жѣ, жа.</i>	<i>полнъ, full, полонъ, лво, лва.</i>
хорошій, good, <i>хорошъ, ошѣ, оша.</i>	<i>злѣй, evil, золъ, зло, зла.</i>
живой, live, <i>живъ, иво, ива.</i>	<i>крѣпкъ, strong, крѣпокъ, ико, ика.</i>
сухой, dry, <i>сухъ, сухо, суха.</i>	<i>лѣгкъ, light, легокъ, гко, гка.</i>
высокій, high, <i>высокъ, окѣ, окѣ.</i>	<i>горкъ, bitter, горекъ, ръко, ръка.</i>
быстрый, rapid, <i>быстъ, тро, трѣ.</i>	<i>сильнъ, vigorous, силенъ, лъно, лъна.</i>
, firm, <i>твѣрдъ, ёрдо, рдѣ.</i>	<i>спокойнъ, quiet, спокеенъ, бйно, бйна.</i>

The following are exceptions to this rule: *достойный, worthy;* *блаженый, happy;* *надмѣнныи, proud,* and *совершеннъ, perfect,* which form: *достойнъ, ойно, бйна;* *блаженъ, надмѣнъ, совершеннъ, енна.*

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except *радъ, joyous,* and *гораzdъ, except,* which have only the apocopated, while *большой, great,* and *менышой, little,* have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *ий,* which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees Degrees of signification. of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1. The *positive* (положительная степень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. *белый* and *белъ*, *white*; *сухой* and *сухъ*, *dry*; *синий* and *синъ*, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная степень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *льший*, *льший*, *ший* (neut. *е*, fem. *а*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *не* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *льший* for the full, and into *не* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

*белый*, white, *comp*, *белыйший* and *белне*, *whiter*.  
*слабый*, weak, . . . . . *слабыйший* and *слабне*, *weaker*.  
*живой*, live, . . . . . *живыйший* and *живне*, *more live*.  
*полный*, full, . . . . . *полныйший* and *полнне*, *more full*.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *льший*, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp* *full term.* *богатыйший*, *apoc. term.* *богаче*.  
*дешевый*, cheap, . . . . . *дешевыйший*, . . . . . *дешевле*.  
*густой*, thick, . . . . . *густыйший*, . . . . . *гуще*.  
*красный*, handsome, . . . . . *красныйший*, . . . . . *красне*.  
 (No *красный*, *red*, forms regularly *красне*)  
*круглый*, steep, . . . . . *круглыйший*, . . . . . *кругче*.  
*поздний*, tardy, . . . . . *позднийший*, . . . . . *позже*.  
*простой*, simple, . . . . . *простыйший*, . . . . . *проще* (and *просте*.)  
*твёрдый*, firm, . . . . . *твёрдыйший*, . . . . . *твёрже*.  
*толстый*, thick, . . . . . *толстыйший*, . . . . . *толще*.  
*частый*, frequent, . . . . . *частыйший*, . . . . . *чаше*.  
*чистый*, pure, . . . . . *чистыйший*, . . . . . *чище*.

The adjectives *горячий*, *burning*; *лысый*, *bald*; *сизый*, *dove-coloured*; *свежий*, *fresh*; and others in *зый*, *сый*, *жий*, *чи* have only the apocopated termination *не*: *горячне*, *сизне*, *свежне*.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *айший* for the full, and into *е* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгий, strict, *comp. строжайший* and *строже*, *st̄ožter*.

крепкий, strong, . . . . . *крапчайший* and *крапче*, stronger.

вётхий, old, . . . . . *вётшайший* and *вётше*, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *ий*, *ий*, *хий*, *хий*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

дологий, long, *comp. full term. должайший*, *afos. term. больше*.

дорогой, dear, . . . . . *дражайший*, . . . . . *дороже*.

далекий and *дальний*, far, . . . . . *далнайший*, . . . . . *дальше*.

близкий, near, . . . . . *ближайший*, . . . . . *бліже*.

глубокий, deep, . . . . . *глубочайший*, . . . . . *глубоже*.

горький, bitter, . . . . . *горчайший*, . . . . . *горче*.

(No *горький*, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection *горшій* and *горше*.)

короткий and *краткий*, short, . . . . . *кратчайший*, . . . . . *короче*.

рядкий, rare, . . . . . *рядчайший*, . . . . . *рвже*.

сладкий, sweet, . . . . . *сладчайший*, . . . . . *слаше*.

тонкий, thin, . . . . . *тончайший*, . . . . . *тоньше*.

тяжкий, heavy, . . . . . *тягчайший*, . . . . . *тагче*,

широкий, broad, . . . . . *широкайший*, . . . . . *шире*.

гайдкий, dirty, . . . . . *These five* { . . . . . *гаже*.

гладкий, smooth, . . . . . } *have not the* { . . . . . *глаже*.

жидкий, liquid, . . . . . } *full term.* { . . . . . *жіже*.

узкий, narrow, . . . . . } *of the com-* { . . . . . *уже*.

слабкий, slack, . . . . . } *parative.* { . . . . . *слабоже*.

3) The inflection *ший* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высокий, high; *comp. full term. высший*, *afos. term. выше*.

молодой, young; . . . . . *младший*, . . . . . *моложе*.

низкий, low; . . . . . *низший*, . . . . . *ниже*.

старый, old; . . . . . *старший* and *старыйший*, *старше* and *старве*.

худой, bad; . . . . . *худший*, . . . . . *хуже*.

великий (and *большой*), great; *большій*, . . . . . *больше*.

малый (and *меньшой*), little; *меньшій*, . . . . . *меньше*.

хороший, good; . . . . . *лучший*, . . . . . *лучше*.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *тόньше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *more distant*, *больше*, *greater*, *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *долье*, *longer*; *тόнье*, *finer*; *далье*, *further*; *болье*, *more*; *менье*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *но*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *поболье*, *a little whiter*; *потоньше*, *a little finer*; *получше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *болье* before the positive; e. g. *болье узкий*, *narrower*; *болье жидкий*, *more liquid*; *болье радъ*, *more joyous*; *болье гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (превосходная степень) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

великий, great, *compar.* *большой*; *superl.* величайший, greatest.  
высокий, high, . . . . . высший; . . . . . высочайший, highest.  
малый, little, . . . . . меньший; . . . . . малый, least.  
низкий, low, . . . . . низкий; . . . . . нижайший, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всъхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *наи* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайший* (*изъ всъхъ*), *наилегчайший* or *самый лёгкий*, *the lightest*; *лучший* (*изъ всъхъ*), *наилучший*, or *самый лучший* (*improperly, for* *самый хороший*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всъхъ* or *всегд*, e. g. *всъхъ лёгче*, *the lightest*; *всъхъ лучше*, *the best*; *всегд важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всегд труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная степень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бледатый* чёрнила, *whitish* ink; *рыжененькая* лошадка, *a little bay horse*; *маленькая* девочка, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *оватый* or *еватый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *оватъ* or *еватъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онький* and *енький* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекъ* and *енекъ* (neut. *нько*, fem. *нька*); e. g.

*блый*, white; *дим.* *блеватый* or *блевовать*, and *бленкъ* or *блёнекъ*.  
*тёплый*, hot; . . . *тепловатый* or *тепловать*, and *тепленкъ* or *теплёнекъ*.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *суховатый* or *суховать*, and *сухонкъ* or *сухёнекъ*.  
*красный*, red; . . . *красноватый* or *-новать*, and *красненький* or *-нёнекъ*.  
*синий*, blue; . . . *синеватый* or *синевать*, and *сайненький* or *синёнекъ*.  
*рыжий*, bay; . . . *рыжеватый* or *рыжевать*, and *рыженкъ* or *рыжёнекъ*.

The diminutive ending *оватый*, *еватый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виноватый*, *culpable*; *угловатый*, *angular*; *ноздреватый*, *porous*; *угреватый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увелічительная степень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ёхонекъ* and *ёшенекъ*, or *охонекъ* and *ошенекъ* (neut. *нько*, fem. *нька*); e. g.

*блый*, white; *аугм.* *преблый*, or *блёхонекъ* and *блёшенекъ*, quite white.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухохонекъ* and *сухошенекъ*, very dry.  
*лёгкий*, light; . . . *прелёгкий*, or *легбонекъ* and *легбшенекъ*, very light.  
*малый*, little; . . . *премалый*, or *малёхонекъ* and *малёшенекъ*, very little.

## DECLNSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

		FIRST		SECOND		THIRD.	
		FULL TERMINATION.		APOCOPATED TERMINATION.		MIXED TERMINATION.	
		Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Masculine gender.	
SINGULAR.		Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Masculine gender.	
PLURAL.		Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Masculine gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
Masculine gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.		Neut. gender. Fem. gender.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	
For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.		For the three genders.	

The adjective *прекрасный*, *beautiful*, in which the particle *не* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from *красный*, *red*; but it is not the same case with *прелестный*, *charming*, derived from *прелесть*, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *и* (neut. *в*, fem. *въ*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative singular masculine*, instead of *ый*, or of *и* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. *слепой*, *blind*; *восковой*, *of wax*; *глухой*, *deaf*; *чужой*, *foreign*; *большой*, *great* (instead of *слепой*, *восковой*, *глухой*, *чужой*, *большой*).

2. The inflection *ын* or *и* of the *genitive singular feminine* is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. *крутьсть святых жизни*, *the sweetness of a holy life*; *Соборъ Казанскія Божія Матери*, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *вей* of the *instrumental singular feminine* is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *вено* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *и*, of the *prepositional singular masculine and neuter* of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paratigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

Declension of adjectives.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

		S I N G U					
		Masculine and neuter genders.					
		Nomin. and Vocative.	Genitive.	Dative.	Accus.	Instr.	Prep.
FIRST.	FULL.	1. { <i>m.</i> новый, new . . . . . }	нов-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		2. { <i>m.</i> мяткій, tender . . . . . }	мятк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		3. { <i>m.</i> синій, blue . . . . . }	син-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		4. { <i>m.</i> свѣжій, fresh . . . . . }	свѣж-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		5. (Графъ) Толстой . . . . .	Толст-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		6. <i>m.</i> портной, a tailor . . . . .	портн-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		7. <i>n.</i> жаркое, a roast . . . . .	жарк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		8. . . . .					
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	9. { <i>m.</i> царевъ, the king's . . . . . }	царев-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		10. { <i>m.</i> бѣло . . . . . }	бѣл-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		11. (Князъ) Репинъ . . . . .	Репин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		12. (городъ) Кашинъ . . . . .	Кашин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		13. (село) Бородинъ . . . . .	Бородин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		14. . . . .					
		15. { <i>m.</i> Господень, the Lord's . . . . . }	Господн-а . . . . .	ю . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		16. { <i>m.</i> синя, blue . . . . . }	син-а . . . . .	ю . . . . .	like {the Genitive, with the names of inanimate beings.}	ынъ . . . . .	
THIRD.	MIXED.	17. { <i>m.</i> рыбнй, of fish . . . . . }	рыб-ыаго . . . . .	ьему . . . . .		ынъ . . . . .	
		{ <i>n.</i> рыбье . . . . . }					

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.
2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

L A R.		P L U R A L.		
Feminine gender.		For the three genders.		
<i>N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.</i>		<i>Nom. and Voc.</i>	<i>Gen. and Pr.</i>	<i>Dat. Accus. Instr.</i>
нóв-ал . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою		нóв-ые . . . }	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
мáгк-ий . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою		мáгк-ие . . . }	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
сáн-ия . . . ей . . . юю . . . ею		сáн-ие . . . }	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
свáж-ий . . . ей . . . ую . . . ею (График)		свáж-ие . . . }	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
Толст-ий . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою	(График)	Толст-ые . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		порти-ые . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		жарк-ия . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
кладов-ал . . . ой . . . ую . . . ою	a storehouse.	кладов-ые . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
царéв-а . . . ой . . . у . . . ою		царéв-и . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
бáл-á . . . ой . . . у . . . ою (Кицзин)		бáл-и . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
Репин-á . . . ой . . . у . . . ою		(Кицзин) Репин-и . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
(дерéвня)		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
Мýрин-а . . . ой . . . у . . . ою		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
Господи-я . . . ей . . . ю . . . ою		Господи-и . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
син-á . . . ей . . . ю . . . ою		син-и . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·
рыб-ья . . . ьей . . . ъю . . . ъю		рыб-ы . . .	нхъ . . . ымъ .	мнн
· · · · ·		· · · · ·	· · · · ·	· · · · ·

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the IIIrd declension; ex. мы любимъ *сврача оузы*, we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ *свриных оузы*, we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пуш́исты́й и́нен* (instead of *пуш́истые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *бóстры́е вóды* (instead of *бóстры́я*), *rapid waters*; *дóбру́м мóлодцу* (instead of *дóброму́*), *to the good young man*; *сырúй зéмлю* (instead of *сырúю*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *ie*, *и́л*, *и́лго*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *бе*, *бá*, *бáго*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms of the declensions of all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76 sq.)

First declension. According to the 1st paradigm (*и́овый*) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ий*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овы́й*, *евы́й*, *ны́й*, *и́ный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ий* when accented is changed into *ий*. Such are:

1) <i>Дóбрый</i> , good, <i>и. дóбре</i> , <i>f. дóбрыя</i> .	<i>Дорожный</i> , of road, <i>дорожное</i> , <i>дорожна</i> .
<i>Сíлный</i> , vigorous, <i>сáльное</i> , <i>силь-на</i>	<i>Носовýй</i> , of the nose, <i>носовóе</i> , <i>носовáя</i>
<i>Стáрый</i> , old, <i>стáрое</i> , <i>стáрая</i>	3) <i>Золотýй</i> , of gold, <i>золотóе</i> , <i>золотáя</i> .
<i>Чéрный</i> , black, <i>чёрное</i> , <i>чёрная</i> .	<i>Желéзный</i> , of iron, <i>желéзное</i> , <i>желéзная</i> .
<i>Красный</i> , red, <i>красное</i> , <i>красна</i> .	<i>Мáсляный</i> , of oil, <i>мáсляное</i> , <i>мáсляна</i> .
<i>Бéлый</i> , white, <i>бáлое</i> , <i>бáла</i> .	<i>Кóжаный</i> , of leather, <i>кóжаное</i> , <i>кóжана</i> .
<i>Умный</i> , wise, <i>умное</i> , <i>умна</i> .	<i>Деревáинный</i> , of wood, <i>деревáинное</i> , <i>деревáинна</i> .
<i>Грúбый</i> , coarse, <i>грúбое</i> , <i>грúбая</i> .	4) <i>Бывóватый</i> , whitish, <i>бывóвтое</i> , <i>бывóвта</i> .
<i>Полный</i> , full, <i>полное</i> , <i>полна</i> .	<i>Красновáтый</i> , reddish, <i>красновáтое</i> , <i>красновáтая</i> .
<i>Нéжный</i> , tender, <i>нéжное</i> , <i>нéжна</i> .	<i>Синевáтый</i> , bluish, <i>синевáтое</i> , <i>синевáтая</i> .
<i>Слáпой</i> , blind, <i>слáпое</i> , <i>слáпна</i> .	<i>Рыжевáтый</i> , ruddy, <i>рыжевáтое</i> , <i>рыжевáтая</i> .
<i>Простóй</i> , simple, <i>простóе</i> , <i>простáя</i> .	
<i>Худóй</i> , bad, <i>худóе</i> , <i>худáя</i> .	
<i>Нéмой</i> , dumb, <i>нéмое</i> , <i>нéмна</i> .	
2) <i>Бóбрый</i> , of beaver, <i>и. бóброе</i> , <i>f. -бáя</i> .	
<i>Ежéвый</i> , of hedgehog, <i>ежéвое</i> , <i>ежéвая</i> .	
<i>Пчелíный</i> , of bee, <i>пчелíное</i> , <i>пчелíная</i> .	

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкий) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *гій*, *кій*, *хій*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скій* and *щій*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енкій* and *онкій*; the termination *ій* when accented being also changed into *ій*. Such are: “

1) *Лёгкій*, light, *н.* лёгкое, *ж.* лёгкая.  
*Стрóлкій*, strict, стрóгое, стрóгая.  
*Крóткій*, kind, крótкое, крótкая.  
*Велікій*, great, великое, великая.  
*Упру́гій*, elastic, упру́гое, упру́гая.  
*Гóркій*, bitter, гóркое, гóркая.  
*Вéтхій*, old, вéтхое, вéтхая.  
*Дорогóй*, dear, дорогóе, дорогóая.  
*Сухóй*, dry, сухóе, сухóая.  
*Глухóй*, deaf, глухóе, глухóая.  
2) *Звéрскій*, bestial, си́брское, -ская  
*Жéнскій*, feminine, жéнское, жéн-  
 ская

Госпóдскій, seigneurial, *н.* госпóд-  
 ское, *ж.* госпóдская  
*Рýсскій*, Russian, рýсское, рýс-  
 ская.  
*Нéмéцкій*, German, нéмéцкое,  
 нéмéцкая  
*Людскóй*, men's, людское, людскáя.  
*Городскóй*, of a town, городское,  
 городскáя.  
3) *Мáленкій*, little, мáленкое, -кая  
*Бáленкій*, whitish, бáленкое,  
 бáленккая  
*Лёгоныкій*, lightish, лёгоныкое, -кая

According to the 3rd paradigm (жінкій) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *ій* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*); such are:

1) *Дréвній*, ancient, *н.* дрёвнее, *ж.*  
 дрёвнія. [блíжнія].  
*Бліжній*, neighbour, бліжніе,  
*Дáльній*, distant, дáльнее, дáльня.  
*И́скренній*, sincere, іскреннее,  
 іскрення.  
*Игрéній*, light-sorrel, игрéнное,  
 игрéння.  
*Порóжній*, empty, порóжнее, по-  
 рóжня.  
*Поздній*, tardy, поздннее, позднія.  
*Рáнній*, early, рáннее, рáння.  
2) *Вчeraшній*, yesterday's, вчera-  
 шнее, -шня.  
*Вечéрній*, evening's, вечéрнее, ве-  
 чéрня.  
*Утrenній*, morning's, утrenнее,  
 утrenня.

Здáшній, of here, *н.* здáшнее, *ж.*  
 здáшня.  
*Нýнéшній*, actual, нýнéшнее,  
 -нýнéшня.  
*Зýмній*, hybernal, зýмнее, зýмня.  
*Весéнній*, vernal, весéннее, -ня.  
*Лéтній*, estival, лéтнее, лéтня.  
*О́сенній*, autumnal, осенное, осен-  
 ная.  
*Прéжній*, precedent, прéжнее,  
 -жня.  
*Послáдній*, last, послáднее, -дня.  
3) *Мýжній*, marital, мýжнее, мýж-  
 ная.  
*Дру́жній*, friend's, дру́жнее, дру́ж-  
 ная.  
*Сынóвній*, filial, сынóвнее, сынóв-  
 ная.

According to the 4th paradigm (свéжій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *асій*, *чий*, *ший* and *щій* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ій* when accented is changed into *ій*. Such are:

1) **Джо́ж**, robust, *n.* **джо́жес**, *f.* **джо́жал**  
**Горя́ч**, hot, горячее, горячая  
**Кипя́ч**, boiling, кипячее, -чая  
**Хоро́ш**, good, хорошее, хорошая  
**Больш**, great, большое, большая  
**Похож**, resembling, похожее,  
 -жая  
**Пригож**, pretty, пригожее, при-  
 гожая

Чужо́й, foreign, *n.* **чужо́е**, *f.* **чужа́л**  
**Обыч**, common, общее, общая  
**Ниц**, poor, нищее, нищая  
 2) **Больш**, greater, большее, боль-  
 шая  
**Лучш**, better, лучшее, лучшая  
**Меньш**, least, мельшее, мельшая  
**Нежн**, more tender, -йшее,  
 -шая

According to the 5th paradigm (Толсто́й) are declined family names in *ий* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *а*); the vowel *о* being changed into *у* after a guttural. Such are:

Смиро́в, Smirnov, <i>f.</i> Смиро́ва	Трубецко́й, Troobetzkoy, <i>f.</i> Трубец- кая
Полево́й, Poluwoi, Полевая	Завадо́вский, Zavadovskiy, Завадо- вская
Наре́жный, Narajhny, Наре́жная	Жуко́вский, Zhukovskiy, Жуко́вская
Брани́цкий, Branitzki, Браницкая	Меще́рский, Mestcherski, Меще́рская
Бобри́нский, Bobrinski, Бобринская	
Долгору́кий, Dolgorooki, Долору́кая	

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: *Мертваго*, *Mertvaho*; *Паренаго*, *Parenaho*; *Сухихъ*, *Sookhih*, *Нагихъ*, *Naghikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жаркое, кладовáя) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *а* into *у* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

1) <b>Выборный</b> , a deputy.	2) <b>Животное</b> , an animal.
Всесто́вый, a messenger.	Мороженое, ice-creams.
Кормчий, the pilot	Насекомое, an insect.
Часово́й, a sentry.	3) <b>Вселенная</b> , the universe.
Мастерово́й, an artisan	Гостиная, a drawing-room.
Подъя́чий, a clerk.	Набережная, a quay.
Прохождий, a passenger.	Чертежная, room for the drawers.
Певчий, a chanter.	Передняя, an antechamber.

**Second declension.** According to the 9th paradigm (царевъ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*). Such are:

Сыно́въ, son's, <i>n.</i> <b>сыно́во</b> , <i>f.</i> <b>сыно́ва</b>	Христо́въ, Christ's, <i>n.</i> <b>Христо́во</b> , <i>f.</i> <b>Христо́вна</b>
Петро́въ, Peter's, Петро́во, Петро́ва	Мáтеринъ, mother's, мáтерино, -рина.
Отце́въ, father's, отце́во, отце́ва.	Доче́ринъ, daughter's, доче́рено, доче́рина
Геро́въ, hero's, геро́во, геро́ва	
Па́вловъ, Paul's, Па́влово, Па́влова	

Никитинъ, Nicetas's, *и.* Никитинъ, *ж.* Царыцынъ, the queen's, *и.* царыцыно, Никитина. *ж.* -цына *и.* -цына Ильинъ, Elias's, Ильинъ. Ильинъ. Девицынъ, the girl's, *девицыно.*

The adjective Христовъ takes in the prepositional singular the inflection *и* (instead of *омъ*) in the phrase: *но Рождество Христово* (instead of *Христовомъ*), *after the Birth of Christ.*

According to the 10th paradigm (бѣль) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in *о* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in *жсъ*, *чсъ*, *шсъ* and *шчъ*, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change *и* into *и* after the gutturals (*г*, *к*, *х*), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

Радъ, joyous, <i>и</i> радо, <i>ж.</i> рада; <i>ж.</i> рады	Высокъ, high, <i>и.</i> высокъ, <i>ж.</i> высокѣ;
	<i>ж.</i> высокій
Гораздъ, expert, -до, -да; горазды	Сиѣнъ, vigorouc, сильно, сильна;
Новъ, new, ново, нова, новы	сильны
Слабъ, weak, слабо, слаба; слабы	Уменъ, wise, умно, умна; умны
Цѣлъ, entire, цѣло, цѣла; цѣлы	Тепель, hot, тепло, тепла; теплы
Великъ, great, велико, велика; велики	Легокъ, light, легкѣ, легка; легкій
Сухъ, dry, сухо, суха; сухы	Добръ, good, добро, добра; добры
Крѣпокъ, strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; крѣпки	Желтъ, yellow, желтѣ, желты; желтны.
	Боленъ, sick, болио, болна; болны.

According to the 11th paradigm (Репнинъ) are declined family names in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *енъ* (sem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflection *и* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

Суворовъ, Sovorof, <i>ж.</i> Суворова	Дмитревъ, Dmitrief, <i>ж.</i> Дмитрева
Кутузовъ, Kootoosof, Кутузова	Гурьевъ, Goorief, Гурьева
Ломоносовъ, Lomonossof, Ломон- сова.	Васильевъ, Vassilief, Васильева
Стрѣговъ, Stroganof, Стрѣгanova	Державинъ, Derzhavin, Державина.
Крыловъ, Krylof, Крылова	Карамзинъ, Karamzin, Карамзинъ
Шишковъ, Shishkof, Шишкова.	Княжнинъ, Kniazhnin, Княжнинъ
Херасковъ, Kheraskof, Хераскова	Пушкинъ, Pooshkin, Пушкина
Орловъ, Orlof, Орлова	Потѣмкинъ, Potiomkin, Потѣмкина.
	Голицынъ, Golitzin, Голицына

Foreign family names, such as: Базедовъ, Basedow; Канкринъ, Cancrin, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *овч*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g: у Графини Кан-крина, at the Countess Cancrin; у Госпожи Максимович *ог* Максимовичевой, at Madame Maximovitch.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (Кашинъ, Бородинъ, Муринъ) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово*, *ево*, *ино*, *ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова*, *ева*, *ина*, *ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *и* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

1) (городъ) Борисовъ, Borisof.	Царыцино, Tzaritzino.
Могилевъ, Mohilef	Остянкино, Ostankino.
Алексинъ, Alexin.	3) (деревня) Пиргово, Pergolova.
Козлово, Kozlof.	Краскова, Kraskova.
2) (село) Тарутино, Tarootino	Леташева, Letachova.
Измайлово, Izmailovo	Валутина, Valootina.

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: Кіевъ, *Kief*; Псковъ, *Pleskow*; Харьковъ, *Charkof*; Гдовъ, *Gdof*; Ростовъ, *Rostof*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. Берлинъ, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ынъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ*, *цкъ* and *ъ*; as: Смоленскъ, *Smolensk*; Полоцкъ, *Polotsk*; Ярославль, *Yaroslavle*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *новъ* and *бъльо*, as: Новгородъ, *Novgorod*; Бълобозеро, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* Новагорода, Бълабозера; *D.* Новугороду, Бълбозеру; *I.* Новымъ-городомъ, Бълымъ-бозеромъ; *P.* о Новугородъ, Бълбозеръ (taking also the inflection *и* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (Госпόдень) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Бóжíй, of God, *n.* Бóжíе, *f.* Бóжíя, *pl.* Бóжíи, which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective бóжеский, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Бóжíй takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Бóжые дéрево, *southern wood* (a plant); Бóжья корóвка, *cockroach, the lady-bird*; *G.* Бóжыго дéрева, Бóжьей корóвки, *D.* Бóжьему дéреву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (синь) are declined \*the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *ь* or *з* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), and also those in *окз*, *чз*, *шз*, *щз* (neut. *e*, fem. *а*), remembering to change *я* into *а* and *ю* into *ю* after the hissings (*ж*, *ч*, *ш*, *щ*). Such are:

Древенъ, ancient, <i>и</i> древне, <i>f</i> древни	Свѣжъ, fresh, <i>и</i> свѣжѣ, <i>f</i> свѣжѣ
Искрененъ, sincere, <i>и</i> скренне, <i>f</i> скренни	Рыжъ, caroty, рыже, рыжѣ
Пороженъ, empty, порожне, порожни	Горѣть, burning, горачѣ, горача
Дюжъ, robust, <i>дюж</i> , <i>дюж</i>	Хорошъ, good, хорошо, хороша
Похожъ, semblable, похоже, похожа	Тощъ, fasting, тоще, тоща

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбий) are declined the <sup>Third</sup> declension, common possessive adjectives in *ий*, *овий*, *евий* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g.

Олѣній, of deer, <i>и</i> олѣнье, <i>f</i> олѣнья	Птичій, of bird, <i>и</i> птичье, <i>f</i> птичья
Соболій, of sable, соболье, соболья	Пѣтушій, of cock, пѣтушье, пѣтушья
Козлій, of goat, козье, козы	Верблюжій, of camel, верблюжье, -жья
Короплій, of cow, коровье, коровы	Лебідкій, of swan, лебідьже, лебідьжя
Овчій, of sheep, овчье, овчы	Волобій, of ox, волобье, волобья
Медвѣжій, of bear, медвѣжье, чедвѣжья	Конѣй, of horse, конѣые, конѣвья
Бараній, of ram, баранье, бараны	Муший, of fly, мушье, мушы
Говяжій, of ox, говяжье говяжы	Телѣчій, of calf, телѣчье, телѣчы
Слоновій, of elephant, слоновье, -вья	Клоповій, of bug, клоповье, клоповы
Сомовій, of silurus, сомовье, сомовы	Волчій, of wolf, волчье, волчы
Лисій, of fox, лисье, лисы	Человѣчій, of man, человѣчье, -вѣчы

The possessive adjective *человѣчий* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *человѣческій* (*и. ое*, *f. ая*) to man as an intelligent being.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; <sup>of the</sup> Апосое  
Пустой карманъ; (есмо) . Крѣпкій замокъ; termination,  
the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been  
. Вѣрный слуга; быръ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent. An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer; the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt. An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families; the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.

faithful . Мягкий воскъ; . Спокойный сонъ; . достойный сынъ; . Истинный другъ; . Совершеннй покой; . Прозрачный стеклъ; . Древнй преданіе; . было . Тёплый лтво; . будетъ . Тупой перо; . Бтхий хижина; . Синий бумага; . Новый домъ; . (суть) . Богатый семья; . были . Красный знамя; . будутъ .

Degrees of signification White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is (есть) быстрый, а Волга . . Молоко liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher. рвка. Домъ (суть) высокий, а башня . Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little; Хороший чай; . Собака малый; the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is копка . . но мышь; . Отецъ young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest. молодой: мать; . но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;  
 Сено дорогой, а солома . Молоко сладкий;  
 sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.  
 сахаръ ; но мёдъ

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish  
 Белый бумага; бурый чернила *pl.*; чёрный  
 water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;  
 вода; краска (*estm.*) синий. Бурый коровка; малый лошадка;  
 a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed  
 пегий лошадка; бедный девочка; старичекъ  
 man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white  
 (*estm.*) старый; старушка добрый. Белый  
 paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood  
 бумага; . . . . . сухой дровя *pl.*;  
 is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension  
 Хозяинъ обширный садъ, и хозяйка новый of the full  
 termination.  
 house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole  
 домъ. Стаканъ хороший вода и красный вино; целый  
 pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good  
 горшокъ свиной сало и еловый смола. Делай (*acc.*) добро  
 to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go  
 бедный дитя и дряхлый старикъ, и не ходи  
 into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince  
 по (*dat.*) поле чужой. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ Князь  
 Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and  
 Долгорукій, вотъ дворецъ Графиня Толстой, а  
 there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovski.  
 вотъ обширный садъ молодой Графъ Завадовский.  
 I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.  
 Я дивился (*dat.*) приятный пѣніе соловей прошлогодній.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are  
 Чинить (acc.) лебединый перо тупой ножикъ. Вотъ (nom.)  
 some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,  
 гусиный перо, красный карандашъ, толстый тетрадь f,  
 some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here  
 дубовый линейка, и большой циркуль m, а вотъ  
 are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,  
 суконный кафтанъ, шелковый чулокъ, пуховый шляпа,  
 fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good  
 тонкий полотно и тончайший кружево. Любить (acc.) непрочный  
 morals; read useful books; honour old people;  
 нравъ; читай (acc.) полезный книга; чти (acc.) старый людъ pl;  
 praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful  
 хвали (acc.) добрый дѣло; береги (acc.) честный и верный  
 servant. Give the new book to the most attentive  
 слуга. Подари (acc.) новый книга (dat.) самый прилежный  
 scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour  
 ученикъ. Ты хвалишь (acc.) погода весенний, ясность f  
 of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds  
 лѣтний ночь f, прохлада осенний и холодъ  
 of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious  
 зимний. Я уважаю (acc.) славный мужъ и знаменитый  
 commanders of ancient times. The great military manœuvres of  
 полководецъ дреинъ время. Большой манёвръ въ (prep.)  
 this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the  
 нынешний годъ будуть въ (prep.) Красное Село и на (prep.)  
 mountain of Douderhof.  
 Гора Дудергофский.

Declension of the apocopated termination. He has left the house of his father, and he does  
 Онъ выѣхалъ изъ (gen.) домъ отцъ, и дѣлаетъ (acc.)  
 good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property  
 добрѣ (dat.) дочь f сестринъ. Онъ продалъ (acc.) имѣніе

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of жёнинъ (dat.) сынъ братнинъ. Посещать (acc.) храмъ the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to Господень и церкви Божиј. Повиноваться (dat.) the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the воля Господень, и познавать (acc.) величество name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by имя Божиј. Первый Русский Грамматика была написана (instr.) the immortal Lomonossof, and the History of Russia by бессмертный Ломоносовъ, и История Российской (instr.) Nicholas Mikhailovitsch Karamzin. The battles against the Николай Михайлович Карамзинъ. Сражение съ (instr.) French were fought near Бородино and Борисоф. Французы происходили подъ (instr.) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ. I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages Я живалъ въ (prep.) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревни of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin. Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (instr.) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable- cap, a bird- nest, Decension of the mixed Вотъ (nom.) шуба лисий, соболий шапка, птичий гнездо, termination some hare- skins, and some elephant's teeth. А роод of deer- заячий мехъ и слоновий зубъ. Пудъ олений flesh, a yard of ox- skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do мясо, аршинъ воловий кожа, и фунтъ телячий мозгъ. Не not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den ходи по (dat.) следъ волчий, и не входи въ (acc.) берлога of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the медвежий. Разсуждение о (prep.) человечий глазъ, и о fish- head. Не deals in isinglass, in ox- fat, рыбий голова. Онъ торгуется (instr.) рыбий клей, бычачий сало, in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs. козий шкура, и петухий грёбень.

Declension of various adjectives The braggart is like the jay, adorned with  
Хвасту́нь (есть) похóжий на (acc.) сóя, укráшeнnyй (instr.)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from  
пáвлиний перó. Братъ сосéдовъ прíехaль изъ (gen.)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.  
дáльний городъ, а сестrá изъ дáльний дерéвня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still  
Ивáновъ плáтье (есть) юзкий, но (плáтье) Петровъ (есть) ещé

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp  
юзкий. Дóбрый старушка живетъ въ (prep.) сырой

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a  
домъ, лежащий подъ (instr.) селó Царицыно. Я купилъ (acc.)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a  
шуба медвéжий съ (instr.) воротникъ бобровый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk- ribbon. There is a handsome  
шáпка бобровый съ шéлковый лента. Вотъ (nom.) прекрасный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we  
книга въ (prep.) богáгый переплеть сафьянный. Гдé мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted  
найдемъ примеръ чистый самоотвержéніе, высокий

love for the native land?  
любóвь f къ (dat.) отéчество?

### THE NUMERALS.

Division of numerals. 41. — The *numerals* (числительные именá) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (кóличественные), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (порядочные), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *первый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

## CARDINAL NUMERALS.

## ORDINAL NUMERALS.

1. оди́нь, <i>n.</i> оди́о, <i>f.</i> оди́на ( <i>sl.</i> еди́нъ, <i>и́но, и́на</i> ) . . . . .	пе́рвый, <i>n.</i> пе́рвое, <i>f.</i> пе́рвая, <i>first.</i>
2. два, <i>f.</i> двѣ . . . . .	второ́й, бе, а́я, <i>second.</i>
3. три . . . . .	трéтій, тье, тъя, <i>third.</i>
4. четы́ре . . . . .	четвéртый, ое, а́я, <i>fourth.</i>
5. пять . . . . .	пáтый, ое, а́я, <i>fifth.</i>
6. шесть . . . . .	шестóй, бе, а́я, <i>sixth.</i>
7. се́мь ( <i>sl. седьмо</i> ) . . . . .	седьмóй, бе, а́я, <i>seventh.</i>
8. вóсемь ( <i>sl. осьмо</i> ) . . . . .	осьмóй, бе, а́я, <i>eighth.</i>
9. дéвять . . . . .	девáгый, ое, а́я, <i>ninth.</i>
10. дéсять . . . . .	десáтый, ое, а́я, <i>tenth.</i>
11. оди́надцать . . . . .	оди́надцатый <i>or</i> пе́рвый на́- десать <i>11th.</i>
12. двéнадцать ( <i>sl. дванáдсѧть</i> ) . . . . .	двéнадцатый <i>or</i> второ́й на́- десать, <i>12th.</i>
13. трина́дцать . . . . .	трина́дцатый <i>or</i> трéтій на́- десать, <i>13th.</i>
14. четы́рнадцать . . . . .	четы́рнадцатый <i>or</i> четвéртый на́-десать, <i>14th.</i>
15. пяты́надцать . . . . .	пяты́надцатый <i>or</i> пáтый на́-де- сать, <i>15th.</i>
16. шесты́надцать . . . . .	шесты́надцатый <i>or</i> шестóй на́- десать, <i>16th.</i>
17. семи́надцать . . . . .	семи́надцатый <i>or</i> седьмóй на́- десать, <i>17th.</i>
18. осьмы́надцать <i>or</i> восеми́нáд- цать . . . . .	осьмы́надцатый <i>or</i> осьмóй на́- десать, <i>18th.</i>
19. девяты́надцать . . . . .	девяты́надцатый <i>or</i> девáтый на́- десать, <i>19th.</i>
20. двáдцать ( <i>sl. двáдсѧть</i> ) . . . . .	двадцáтый ( <i>sl. двадесáтый</i> ), ое, а́я, <i>20th.</i>
21. двáдцать оди́нь . . . . .	двáдцать пе́рвый, <i>21st.</i>
22. двáдцать два . . . . .	двáдцать второ́й, <i>22d.</i>
30. тридцать . . . . .	тридцáтый, ое, а́я, <i>30th.</i>
40. сорокъ ( <i>sl. четы́рьедесѧть</i> ). . . . .	сороковóй ( <i>sl. четы́рьедесáтый</i> ), бе, а́я, <i>40th.</i>
50. пятьдесáть . . . . .	пятидесáтый, ое, а́я, <i>50th.</i>

60. шестьдесят . . . . .	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. сéмьдесят . . . . .	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. вóсемьдесят . . . . .	осмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девяносто (sl. дéвяять-десятъ) . . . . .	девяностый (sl. девя́тидеся́тый) 90th.
100. сто . . . . .	сóтый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двéсти . . . . .	двухъ-сóтый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. триста . . . . .	трёхъ-сóтый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четырёста . . . . .	четырёхъ-сóтый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсо́ть . . . . .	пятисо́тый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсо́ть . . . . .	шестисо́тый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. семьсо́ть . . . . .	семисо́тый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. восемьсо́ть . . . . .	осмисо́тый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девятьсо́ть . . . . .	девятисо́тый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. ты́сяча (sl. ты́сяча) . . . . .	ты́сячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двé ты́сячи . . . . .	двухъ-ты́сячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. дéсять ты́сячъ (sl. ты́сяча). . . . .	десятиты́сячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто ты́сячъ . . . . .	стоты́сячный, ое, ая, 100-thousandth.
1,000,000. миллио́нъ . . . . .	миллио́нныи, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два миллио́на . . . . .	дву́хъ-миллио́нныи, ое, ая, two milliopth.
1,000,000,000. ты́сяча миллио́новъ . . . . .	ты́сячемиллио́нныи, ое, ая, 1000-millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. биллио́нъ . . . . .	билио́нныи, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрóбныи) numerals, such as: *полови́на*, *the half*; *треть*, *the third*; *чéтверть*, *the fourth*; *осмы́ха*, *the eighth*; *полторá*, *one and a half*; *полтретъ́*, *two and a half*; *полчетвертá*, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives *другóй*, *other*, and *послéдний*, *last*: *другóй* being used instead of *вторóй*, *second*, and *послéдний* being opposed to *пéрвый*, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два*, *три*, &c. as far as *дέсять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собирательный) numerals: *двое*, *трое*, *чтетверо*, *пятеро*, &c., *дёсятеро*, *сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *óба* (f. *óбъ*), *both*; *двóйка*, *two*; *трóйка*, *three*; *пятóкъ*, *five*; *десятóкъ*, *ten*; *дюжина*, *a dozen*; *сóтня*, *a hundred*.

The numerals *оди́нъ* and *пéрвый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Оди́нъ* takes the augmentative termination *оди́нёхонекъ* and *оди́нёшенекъ*; and *пéрвый* takes the diminutive termination *пéрвенькíй*, as also the inflection of the superlative *пéрвыйши́й* or *сáмый пéрвый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *сóрокъ*, *сто*, *девяносто*, *тысяча*, *миллионъ*, *половина*, *третъ* f., *пятóкъ*, *десятóкъ*, *дюжина*, &c. The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *оди́нъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS 11

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *один* to *десятъ*, and from *оди́дымъ* to *оди́дымъдесятъ*, as also in *две*, *трое*, *четверо* and other similar words. The numerals *пять*, *шестъ*, &c. as far as *десятъ*, as also *дядыамъ* and *тридцатъ*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *я*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *пя́ти*, *пя́ти*, *деся́ти*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *къ пя́ти*, *къ ми́ни*, &c. The numeral *оди́къ*, which is declined like nouns in *я*, differs from them in the accent; for no disyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *оди́къ*, *оди́къ*, &c.

According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двоé and чéтвéро) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трóе and трóи, three.      Шéстero and шéстери, six

О́бое and обои, two.      Дéсяtero and дéсятери, ten

7th par.) Пáтеро and пáтери, five.      Сóтеро and сóтери, hundred.

*Двóе, трóе, чéтвéро, &c.*, are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and *девóи, трóи, чéтвéри*, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. *двóре слугъ*, *two servants*; *трóи часы*, *three watches*. We may still observe that *обóе* had formerly a singular, the genitive, *обóего*, of which is still found in the expression: *жители обóего по́ла*, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пáть and пáтьдесáть) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of *всéмь*, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шéсть, six, *gen.* шéстí

Сéмь, seven, сéмí

Дéвять, nine, девятí

Дéсять, ten, десятí

Однинадцать, eleven, один-

надцати

Двáдцать, twenty, двадцатí

Трíдцать, thirty, *gen.* трид-

цатí [десяти

10th par.) Шéстьдесáть, sixty, шéстí-

Сéмьдесáть, seventy, сéмí-

десятí

Вóсемьдесáть, eighty,

о́смíдесятí

The first member *всéмь* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *gen.* о́смíдесятí, *instr.* вóсемьдесáтью or о́смíдесáтью.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двéсти and пáть-сóтъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Трíста, three hundred, *gen.*

трéхъ сóтъ [сóтъ

Чéтыреста, 400, четырехъ

12th par.) Шéстьсóтъ, 600, шести сóтъ

Сéмьсóтъ, 700, *gen.* сéми

сóтъ

Вóсемьсóтъ, 800, о́сми сóтъ

Девятъсóтъ, 900, девятъ сóтъ

*Де́ьсти* (instead of *девáста*) is the Slavonic dual of *сто*, and was used with *девá* and *обó*, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полторá) are declined such numerals as are formed of *полъ*, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of *пол-трéтьи*, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Полу́четвертá, three and a half, *gen.* полу́четвертá; *fem.* полу́четвертá.

Поли́ятá, four and a half, . . . полу́чила; . . . полу́чили.

Поли́шестá, five and a half, . . . полу́чила; . . . полу́чили.

Полдесятá, nine and a half, . . . полу́чила; . . . полу́чили.

The compound numeral полу́тора́ста, *a hundred and fifty* (*a hundred and a half*) forms полу́торастa in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of полу́тора́ and полу́тора́ста, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (полдень and полу́года) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral полу́, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) Полночь, midnight, *gen.* полу́- Полнóва, half a word, *gen.* полу́слóва  
ночи [часá] Полнинúты, half a minute, полу́-  
16th p.) Полчасá, half an hour, полу- минúты  
Полднíй, half a day, полу́дня Полверстý, half a werst, полу́верстý  
Полведра́, half a pail, полу- Полфунта, half a pound, полу-  
ведра́ фунта

We must remark that the numeral полу́ is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of полу́день and полу́ночь, which signify the *middle of the day or of the night, midday or midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining полу́ to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that полу́день takes in the prepositional with *no* the inflection *и* (instead of *ъ*); thus we say: *по полу́дни*, *after noon*. Such nouns as have полу́ in the nominative singular, as полу́островъ, *a peninsula*; полу́мъсяцъ, *a crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: двáдцать два, *twenty two*; тридцать пять, *thirty five*; сто шесть, *a hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* двадцатí двухъ, тридцатí пятí, ста шестí, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: двáдцать пéрвый, *twenty first*; сто вторóй, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* двáдцать пéрваго, сто вторáго. The same is the case with на́деся́ть, in the compound numbers; e. g. пéрвый-на́деся́ть, *eleventh*; вторóй-на́деся́ть, *twelfth*, where the first part, пéрвый, вторóй, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сброкъ, *forty*; **милліонъ**, *million*; **десятокъ**, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, gen. *сорокá*, **милліона**, *десятика*); **сто**, *a hundred*, and **девяносто**, *ninety*, follow the second; while **дюжина**, *a dozen*; **сотня**, *a hundred*; **тысяча**, *a thousand* (instr. sing. *тысячю* and *тысячью*) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that, the numerals **сброкъ**, **сто** and **девяносто** only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then **сброкъ** and **сто** have also a plural (*сороки*, *сороковъ*; *ста*, *сотъ*, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (*сорокá*, *ста*, *девяноста*), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (neut. *oe*, fem. *ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of **трéтй** (n. *трéтье*, f. *трéтья*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals **два**, **оба**, **три**, **четыре**, **двое**, **трое**, **чтвéро**, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: **пять**, **шесть**, **семь**, **девáцать**, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers **два**, **три**, **четыре**, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as **двáдцать два**, *twenty two*; **сто три**, *a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. *собрать двáдцать два* **вóйна** (and not **девáцать двух** **вóиновъ**), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

1. *Одýнъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, **девáдцать одýнъ**, **сто одýнъ**, the substantive is always put in the singular.

2. The numerals *два*, *оба*, *три*, *четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два*, *сто четыре*, &c.), *полтора*, *полтретья*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два*, *оба*, *полтора*, *полтретья*, agree in gender with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *дёбре*, *трёбе*, *чётверо*, *пятеро*, &c., the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *пέрвые два большие стола*, *the two first large tables*; and *сий пять больших столовъ*, *these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два*, *три*, *четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *двойствi* (*sl. двойствi*). The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the genitive plural after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *пол* (as *полчаса*, *полгода*), as also the numerals *полтора*, *полтретья*, to be placed in the nominative plural: e. g. *пέрвые полчаса*, *the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продолжение пέрваго получаса*, *in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a*) When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятокъ*, *дюжина*, *тысяча*, *миллионъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *срокъ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *b*) With the other numerals, such as: *два*, *оба*, *три*, *четыре*, *пять*, *срокъ*, *девяносто*, *сто*, &c., the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремя стами свиновъ*, *with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста тремя свинами*, *with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ веpстахъ, at forty wersts, and сорокъ сороковъ церквей, one thousand six hundred churches (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *no*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals *два*, *три*, *четыре*, *деве*, *трое*, *четверо*, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (*сорокъ*, *сто* and *девятисто* then take their regular inflection *y*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: по два рублѧ, по пяти рублѧ, по сороку рублѧ, to each two, five, forty roobles.

The numerals *полтора*, *полтретъ*, &c., take also with the preposition *no* the inflection *y* of the dative, and the noun in the genitive singular: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. по полутору рублѧ, to each a rooble and a half.

#### EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes,   
 У(*gen.*) человѣкъ (*есть*) одинь языкъ, одинь нось, два глазъ,   
 two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers   
 два ухо, два щека, два рукъ, два нога, десять палецъ   
 at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth,   
 на (*prep.*) рукъ и десять палецъ на нога, тридцать два зубъ,   
 and seven vertebres. Leap year has four   
 и семь позвонокъ. Въ (*prep.*) високосный годъ (*есть*) четыре   
 seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days,   
 врёмя, 12 мѣсяцъ, 52 недѣля и два день *и*, или 366 день,   
 or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a   
 или 8784 часть, или 527,040 минута. Въ (*prep.*) книга (*есть*)   
 hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two   
 сто листъ безъ (*gen.*) одинь. Оба братъ и оба   
 sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two   
 сестрѣ. Полтора часъ, и полутора минута. Два   
 roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half.   
 рубль *и* съ (*instr.*) половина и три копѣйка съ половина.

The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the  
 Въ (prep.) бéрковецъ (есть) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ  
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96  
 фунтъ 32 лотъ; въ лотъ 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96  
 zolotniks.

ЗОЛОТНИКЪ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four перо-  
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шёлковый платокъ, четыре перо-  
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent  
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфоровый, и шесть прекрасный  
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;  
 картина. Сий два чёрный воронъ; тѣ три белый перо;  
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The  
 мой четыре новые книга; эти пять резвый дитя. Оба  
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.  
 бѣдный сирота, и оба несчастный сирота.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six  
 Двое слуга, троё мастеровой, четворо дитя, шестеро  
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs  
 солдатъ, двои часы *m*, трои очки *m*, пятеры  
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;  
 ножницы. Первый полтора часъ. Первый сорокъ день;  
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.  
 второй сто ефимокъ, и последний тысяча гульденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and  
 Я купилъ одинь быкъ и одинь лошадь, одинь столъ и  
 a mire. Twenty one roobles, fifty one  
 одинь зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль *m*, пятьдесят одинъ  
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty  
 копейка. Тысяча и одинь ночь. Молодой человѣкъ тридцать  
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge  
 одинь годъ безъ (gen.) двадцать одинъ день *m*. Не суди

of a man by a single fault and by a single  
о (prep.) человéкъ по (dat.) оди́нь просту́покъ и по 'оди́н'  
error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter  
ошибка. Офицéръ съ (instr.) двáдцать оди́нь солдáтъ. Пётръ  
the First and Catharine the •Second reigned in the  
Пéрвый и Екатерíна Вторóй цáрствовали въ (prep.)  
eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and  
восемнáдцатый въкъ. Шведы уважáютъ Карль XII, а  
the French have elected a monument to Henry IV. The  
Францúэль постáвили памятникъ Гéнрихъ IV.

article was written on the 15th of the month of January,  
Статья, была писана (gen.) 15 мéсяцъ янвáрь *и*,  
in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI  
годъ 1823, и происшествие относится къ (dat.) VI  
century, and particularly to the year 573.  
въкъ, а именно къ (dat.) годъ 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or  
Шкапъ съ (instr.) люжина тарéлка фарфóровый, или  
with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by  
съ двáдцать тарéлка фарфóровый. Дрóжки, запряжённый (instr.)  
a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage  
пара вороной лóшадь *f*, или два вороной лóшадь; и карéта  
drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six  
запряжённый (instr.) шесть рыжíй лóшадь, или шестёрка  
sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts  
рыжíй лóшадь. Гóродъ лежít въ (prep.) ты́сяча верстá  
from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty  
отсюда, селó во сто верстá, а деревня въ сбóрокъ  
wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty  
верстá. Въ (prep.) Москвá было 1600 цéрковь *f*, или сбóрокъ  
forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty  
сбóрокъ цéрковь. Я довольствуюсь (instr.) вóсемьдесять

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month, рубль *m* (или два сброкъ рубль) въ (acc.) мѣсяцъ, i. e. with 960 roobles a year. Не will not live till то есть 960 рубль въ (acc.) годъ. Онъ не доживѣтъ до (gen.) forty years; and she died at forty three. She is сброкъ лѣто; и она умерла (gen.) сброкъ три лѣто. Она (есть) satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a довѣльный (instr.) сброкъ копѣйка, и она удивилась (dat.) hundred pictures. Не cannot live on less than a сто картина. Онъ не мѣжеть прожить мѣнѣе (gen.) hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (acc.) годъ. Грбодъ съ (instr.) два towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows; башня; комбдъ съ шесть ящиковъ; домъ съ сброкъ окнѣ; a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five крѣостью со сто пушка; црковь *f* о (prep.) пять cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four главы; домъ о (prep.) три яруса; деревня съ (instr.) тетыре wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two вѣтряный мѣльница. Я люблю равнѣ оба сына и оба daughters. He has four children, and she has left five дочь. Онъ имѣетъ чѣтверо дитя, а она оставила пятьterooorphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two сироты. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (instr.) этими два restive horses. He has lived long with his five упрѣмый лошадь. Онъ жилъ долго съ (instr.) своими пять cousins german. To this million of old Prussian братъ двоюродный. Къ (dat.) этому миллиону старый прусскій crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles. сбимокъ надоѣло прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новый рубль *m*. To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs. Каждый по (dat.) сто рубль *m* и по (dat.) сброкъ копѣйка.

Some months have thirty days  
 Въ (prep.) и́который мъсяцъ (есть) по (dat.) тридцать день *m.*,  
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse  
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (prep.) кáждый сарай  
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage  
 было по (nom.) два карéта, а въ кáждый карéта по (nom.)  
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and  
 три мужчины и по четыре жéнщины. Кáждый по (dat.) сто по  
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We  
 девяносто рубль *m.* и по сорокъ по пять копéйка. У насъ  
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of  
 (есть) по (dat.) двáдцать по семь очкí *m.* Кáждый часть /  
 the work is sold at the rate of 2 rooble and a half of silver.  
 сочинéние продаётся по (dat.) полторá рубль *m.* (instr.) серебрó.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During  
 По (dat.) утро не должно судить о (prep.) полдень *m.* Въ (acc.)  
 the first half day he did 'not know what to do. At  
 пéрвый полдни онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (acc.)  
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the  
 четыре часъ по (prep.) полночь, или въ пять часъ по  
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of  
 полдень *m.* Это случилось въ (acc.) послѣдній полгода  
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During  
 годъ 1844. Пéрвый полчаса прошли спокóйно. Въ (acc.)  
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and  
 продолжéние пéрвый полчаса. За миою было полтораста  
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.  
 тысяча рубль *m.* годовóй дохóдъ.

## THE PRONOUNS.

Division of the pronouns. 44. — The *pronouns* (местоимения) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личные) are, in the first person: *я, I*; *plur. мы, we*; in the second *ты, thou*; *plur. вы, you*; and in the third person *онъ, he* (fem. *она́, she*; neut. *онó, it*); *plur. они́, they* (fem. *они́, they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. *я себя знаю, I know myself*; *ты себя бережёшь, thou takest care of thyself*; *мы себя обмáняваем, we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into *ся* or *сь*; e. g. *домъ строится, the house is being built*; *я мóюсь, I wash myself* (instead of *строить себя, мóю себя*).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательные) are, in the first person: *мой, my or mine*; *нашъ, our or ours*; in the second person: *твой, thy or thine*; *вашъ, your or yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected *свой, my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: *егó, of him or his*; *ея́, of her or her*; *ихъ, of them or their*; e. g. *я быть у егó брата, I have been to his brother* (*to the brother of him*); *я знаю ея́ мужа, I know her husband* (*the husband of her*); *я это дёлаю для ихъ детёй, I do that for their children* (*for the children of them*).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательные) are: *сей, этотъ, онъ́й, this*; *тотъ, that*; *тако́й, тако́вой, толи́кій, such or such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительные) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; который, *кой*, *who*; како́й, *каково́й*, *коли́кай*, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; сколько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительные) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (определительные) or *ampliative* (дополнительные) pronouns are: *самъ*, *самый*, *self*; *весь*, *all*; *каждый*, *всякай*, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals *одинъ*, *a single one* or *one only*, and *оба*, *both*.

The pronouns *самъ* and *самый* have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *я самъ*, *myself*; *онъ самъ*, *himself*; *самого себя*, *one's self*; *отецъ самъ*, *the father himself*; *тотъ самый*, *сей самый*, *the very same*; *самая смерть*, *death itself*. The pronoun *самый* before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопределённые) are: *нѣкто*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *something*; *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *кто* *либо*, *кто нибудь*, *кто-то*, *кто ни есть*, *whoever*; *что либо*, *что нибудь*, *что-то*, *что ни есть*, *whatever*; *нѣкій*, *нѣкакій*, *нѣкоторый*, *како́й-то*, *some*; *ни како́й*, *ни кото́рый*, *ни одинъ*, *not any*, *none*; *друго́й*, *ино́й*, *прочій*, *other*; *столько*, *as much*, *as far*; *нѣсколько*, *some*; *много*, *much*; *мало*, *little*; *другъ дру́га*, *each other*; *тотъ и дру́гой*, *the one and the other*; *всякъ*, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: *я*, *ты*, *онъ*, *себя*, *кто*, *что*, *нѣкто*, *нѣчто*, *никто*, *ничто*,

## PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS

P A R A D I G M S :		S I N G U L A R .		Feminine gender.		P L U R A L .	
Masculine and neuter genders.				For the three genders.			
Nom. or Acc.	G. or A.	Dat.	Inst.	Prep.	Nom. G.D. and P. Acc. Inst.	N. or A. G.A and P. Dat.	Nstr.
1. <i>М</i> , <i>І</i> . . . . .	<i>мені</i>	<i>мін</i>	<i>мін</i>	<i>мін</i>	<i>мені</i>	<i>мені</i>	<i>мені</i>
2. <i>ти</i> , <i>ты</i> . . . . .	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>	<i>тебі</i>
3. <i>ви</i> , <i>они</i> , <i>они</i> , <i>они</i> . . . . .	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>	<i>відомо</i>
4. <i>—</i> , <i>хтось</i> , <i>хтось</i> , <i>хтось</i> . . . . .	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>
5. <i>хто</i> , <i>хто</i> , <i>хто</i> , <i>хто</i> . . . . .	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>	<i>хтось</i>
6. <i>чо</i> , <i>чо</i> , <i>чо</i> , <i>чо</i> . . . . .	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>	<i>чтось</i>
7. <i>мой</i> , <i>мой</i> , <i>мой</i> , <i>мой</i> . . . . .	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>	<i>моє</i>
8. <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> . . . . .	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>
9. <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> , <i>наш</i> . . . . .	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>	<i>наш</i>
10. <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> . . . . .	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>
11. <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> , <i>наші</i> . . . . .	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>	<i>наші</i>
12. <i>їх</i> , <i>їх</i> , <i>їх</i> , <i>їх</i> . . . . .	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>	<i>їх</i>
13. <i>сам</i> , <i>сам</i> , <i>сам</i> , <i>сам</i> . . . . .	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>	<i>сам</i>
14. <i>всі</i> , <i>всі</i> , <i>всі</i> , <i>всі</i> . . . . .	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>	<i>всі</i>
15. <i>один</i> , <i>один</i> , <i>один</i> , <i>один</i> . . . . .	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>	<i>один</i>
16. <i>якож</i> , <i>якож</i> , <i>якож</i> , <i>якож</i> . . . . .	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>	<i>якож</i>
such as.							

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*они*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in <sup>Declension of the</sup> *of the pronouns.* a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ий* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *котóрый*, *ónый*, *сáмый*, *кáкский*, *такóвой*, *всáкий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *наш*, *сам*, *сей*, also *такóй* and *какóй*, are declined in a particular way.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *и*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о немъ*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *егó*, *еї*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ егó дóмъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользъ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я еї не видáль* (instead of *еї*), *I have not seen her*; *у неї* (instead of *у неї*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *уней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *никто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто* *либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *ничто*, *что нибудь*, *что* *либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

e. g. *ни у кого*, *to nobody*; *ни къ чему*, *to nothing*; *ни за что*, *for nothing*; *ни съ кемъ*, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибѣдь*, *либо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (*мой*) are declined the pronouns *твой*, *thy*; *свой*, *his*, and *кой*, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (*кóего*, *кóи*, *кóихъ*, &c.). Its compound *нѣкій*, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N.* *нѣкіе*, *f.* *нѣкія*; *G.* *нѣкіхъ*, *D.* *нѣкімъ*, &c.

4. According to the 8th paradigm (*нашъ*) is declined the pronoun *вашъ*, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (*како́й*) are declined *тако́й*, *such*; *нѣкакій*, *some*, and *этакій*, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *ий* or *ый* (sem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: *бный*, *самый*, *всякій*, *друго́й*, *и́ной*, *каково́й*, *таково́й*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns *каково́й* and *таково́й* have also the apocopated termination: *како́въ* and *тако́въ*. In the pronoun *другъ* *друга*, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G.* *другъ* *друга*, *D.* *другъ* *другу*, *A.* *другъ* *друга*, *I.* *другъ* *другомъ*, *P.* *другъ* *о другъ*. The pronouns *самъ-другъ*, *two together*; *самъ-третéй*, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *если́къ* is used instead of *если́кій* *человѣкъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *сколько*, *столько*, *нѣсколько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *но* (*по скольку*, &c.); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*сколькихъ*, *сколькимъ*, *сколькими*, &c.).

8. *Одинъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (п. едино, ф. едина), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *G.* единаго, единой; *D.* единому, &c.; but in the plural it takes the apocopated form: едины, единыхъ, единымъ.

## EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal pronouns  
Я люблю ты, а ты обижáешь я. Я уважáемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,  
а онъ *я* любимъ душéвно. У(*gen.*) я(*estв.*) мнóго дéньги,

and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and  
а у(*gen.*) ты нéть ни (*gen.*) копéйка. Заступись за (*acc.*) онъ, и

depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come  
понадéйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди съ (*instr.*) я, и приходй

with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without  
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтоб онъ пришлá ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)

him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.  
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*еств.*) скúчный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.  
Я не вíжу онъ, а я сдéлаю всé для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend  
Я уважáемъ ты, а ты забыла я. Будь увéренъ

on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me  
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (еств.) Прíятно я

to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art  
быть съ (*instr.*) себé. Я не довéрю себé, а ты (*еси*)

contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they  
довóльный (*instr.*) себé. Я бережéмъ себé, а онъ

do themselves harm.

себé вредáть.

Possessive pronouns. 'My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.  
Мой братъ, твой сестра и онъ сынъ учілись вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our  
Я стараюсь угодить, вашъ учитель *m* и нашъ  
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and  
смотритель *m*. Мой домъ (*есть*) красивый (*gen.*) твой, а  
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,  
твой собака (*есть*) малый (*gen.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*gen.*) онъ,  
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast  
и могу обойтись безъ (*gen.*) онъ помошь. Не хвались (*instr.*)  
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near  
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойдій къ (*dat.*)  
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk  
мой столъ, и подари (*gen.*) дѣнеги твой сестра. Я говоримъ  
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.  
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаешься (*instr.*) свой урокъ.  
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens  
Ученіе (*есть*) горький, но онъ плодъ (*сущ.*) сладкий. Твой садъ  
are superb; I admire their beauties.  
(сущ.) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красота.

Demonstrative pronouns. Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and  
Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *m* и  
those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and  
тотъ дѣрево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ землѣ нѣть (*gen.*) золото; и  
in those no silver. I have heard that from  
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нѣть (*gen.*) серебрѣ. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*gen.*)  
your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your  
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ  
project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you  
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ онъ. Живѣши ли  
lived long in this town? I admire this garden,  
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these  
 а тотъ (есть) хороший. Этотъ перо (суть) тупой; сей  
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes  
 домъ каменный; тотъ улица узкий. Такой глазъ  
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.  
 (суть) проницательный; такой дѣло не приносить (gen.) честь.

Such are men.

Таковы (суть) люди т.

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the Relative substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.  
 Человѣкъ, который ты видитъ, (есть) очень умный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know  
 Книга, который ты читаете, (есть) очень пріятный. Я знаю  
 the affair of which you speak. The water with which  
 дѣло, о (prep.) который ты говорите. Вода, (instr.) который

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who  
 я моюсь, (есть) очень холодный. Берегись (gen.) тотъ, кто  
 flatters thee. He who has much business,  
 льстить (dat.) ты. Тотъ у (gen.) кто (есть) много (gen.) дѣло,  
 does not think of pleasures. Learn that which

не думаетъ о (prep.) забава. Учтесь (dat.) тотъ, (gen.)  
 you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I  
 что ты не знаете. Вотъ (nom.) сукно такой, какои я

bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.  
 купилъ. Каковы были военачальникъ, таковы и воины.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.  
 Вотъ (nom.) другъ, въ (prep.) чей рука (есть) мой судьба.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.  
 Слушайся (gen.) тотъ, въ (prep.) чей домъ ты жилъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and  
Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такої*), (*gen.*) какої (*есть*) мало,

an opportunity like those are rare.

случай какової (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interrogative pro-nouns. What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and прійдёшь? (*instr.*) Какої книга занимáешься, и what people live here? Under what chief какої людим живутъ здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей are these houses? By whose permission hast thou (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown со двора? Я не видалъ, чей шляпа бросили to the ground. I do not know with whose children she на (*acc.*) поль. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дитя она is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and гуляеть. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твой дружба? Съ (*instr.*) что can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты received this money? How many wersts are there получиль этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ from this town to that? Of how many volumes (*gen.*) этотъ го́родъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ is this work composed? How many roobles сей сочиненіе состоять? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *m* will fall to you to each of this profit? достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his Determinative pro-  
Ты самъ согласишся съ (instr.) я: звукъ съмъй онъ nouns.

voice is agreeable. I take this appartment of the  
голосъ (есть) пріятный. Я панимáю сей квартíра у (gen.)  
proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an  
хозяинъ самъ. Порóкъ съмъй находять у (gen.) ты  
excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are  
извинéніе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о (prep.) себя самъ. Ты (есть)  
discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.  
недовольный (instr.) себя самъ. Я видѣли онъ самъ.  
Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves  
Смерть/ съмъй (есть) не страшный. Я весь довольствуемся  
with our only salaries. So think women alone. We  
(instr.) одинъ жалованье. Такъ думаютъ жéнщина одинъ. Я  
two will serve God alone. In each assembly  
оба хотимъ служить (dat.) Богъ едінъ. Въ (prep.) кáждый собрánie  
there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered  
были гражданинъ оба полъ. Онъ (сущ.) разсéяны  
in all the world. One must accustom one's self to  
по (dat.) весь свѣтъ. Нáдобно привыкáть къ (dat.)  
every food.  
всéкій пища.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help of Indefinite  
Нѣтъ (gen.) никто здѣсь; не проси (gen.) помошь/ у (gen.) pronouns.  
anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no  
никтó. Ты не ѿшь (gen.) ничтó, и этотъ не годится къ (dat.)  
purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.  
ничтó. Учись (dat.) что нибóдь, и скажи этотъ кто нибóдь.  
I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and  
Я не продáмъ (gen.) свой домъ за (acc.) ничтó, и  
you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing  
ты продали свой за ничтó. Изъ (gen.) ничтó

one can make nothing. During the space of some months he has bought every day some\* **мѣсяцъ онъ покупалъ ежеднѣвно по (dat.) нѣсколько (gen.)** hundreds of peasants. **сто • душа.**

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The **Оба сестрѣ говорять дурнѣ другъ о (prep.) другъ.**

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are **Англичанинъ и Французъ ненавидятъ другъ друга. Я** going to take a walk with one another. These houses **ходимъ гулять другъ съ (instr.) другъ. Сей домъ** are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown **лежать одинъ за (instr.) другою. Доска (сущ.) наброшены** one with another. **одинъ съ (instr.) другою.**

#### THE VERB.

*Division of verbs.* 47. — The *verbs* (глаголы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (залоги), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйствительные), such as: **дѣлать, to make; любить, to love; мыть, to wash; одѣвать, to clothe.**

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоимѣнныe), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себѣ*. These verbs are: a) *reflected* (возвратные), as: **мыться, to wash one's self; одѣваться, to dress one's self;** b) *reciprocal* (взаимные), as: **обниматься, to embrace each other; ссориться, to dispute with each other;** and c) *common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: *бояться*, *to fear*; *смѣяться*, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter verbs* (срѣдніе), as: *спать*, *to sleep*; *стоять*, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начинателыи), as: *блѣсть*, *to whiten*, *become white*; *сыхнуть*, *to dry*, *become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb *быть*, *to be*, and the inchoative *стать*, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* (вспомогателыи).

4. The *passive verbs* (страдателыи), as: *быть любимымъ*, *to be loved*; *быть почитаемымъ*, *to be venerated*; *дѣло сдѣлано*, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. *дѣло дѣлается*, *the thing is being accomplished*; *домъ строится*, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian <sup>Inflections of the verb.</sup> verbs are: *tense* (врѣмя), *aspect* (видъ) and *mood* (наклоненіе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (числѣ) and *gender* (родъ).

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only <sup>Tenses</sup> three in number: 1) the *present* (настоящее врѣмя); 2) the *preterit* (прошѣдшее), and 3) the *future* (будущее), as: *я читалъ*, *I read*; *я читалъ*, *I have read*; *я буду читать*, *I shall read*.

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only <sup>Aspects.</sup> these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or

*degrees*, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершённый видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я бѣду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просмѣтываю, *I examine*, я просмѣтывалъ, *I set about examining*; я бѣду просмѣтывать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (определённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; зайцъ бѣгаетъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопределённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Васілій теперъ пьётъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kvass*; *Васілій пьётъ и квасъ и воду*, *that happens to be there*.

2. The *perfect* aspect (совершённый), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made*, *I have finished*; *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make*, *I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выкидали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пісню*, *I shall sing over this air*.

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зевнулъ*, *I have yawned*, *I have made a yawn*; *онъ тронетъ ешё разъ въше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выкинула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye*.

3. The *iterative* aspect (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодыя лѣта я жидалъ въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country*.

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect aspect* is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. *бегу*, *I run* (am running now); *иду*, *I go* (am going at this moment); the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in *куть* (preterit *куль*, future *ку*); e. g. *шагнуть*, *to take a step*; *кашлянуть*, *to cough once*; the *iterative aspect* usually ends in *ывать* or *ыватъ* (preterit *ывалъ* or *ывалъ*): e. g. *дѣлываль*, *he usually made*; *говариваль*, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect aspect*. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. *дѣлать*, *to make*, and *сдѣлать*, *to finish making, to have made*; *писать*, *to write*; and *написать*, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. *хотѣть*, *to go*, and *входить*, *to go in*; *восходить*, *to go up*; *выходить*, *to go out*; *доходить*, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

**Moods.** 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонение), e. g. *я хожу*, *I walk*; *мы гуляли*, *we have taken a walk*, *вы бѣдете южинать*, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. *ходи*, *walk*; *пойдѣмте*, *let us go*; *гуляйте*, *take a walk*; and 3) the

*infinitive* (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ужинать, *to sup*.—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сослагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я *желал бы ехать*, *I should wish* or *I should have wished to depart*; я *бы не думалъ, чтобы вы это сделали*, *I should not have believed that you would have done that*.

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читáю, *I read*; читáешь, *thou readest*; читáетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читáю, *I read*, and читáемъ, *we read*; читáешь, *thou readest*, and читáете, *you read*; читáетъ, *he reads*, and читáютъ, *they read*; читáй, *read*, and читáйте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читáлъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читáло, *the child read*; служáнка читáла, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. *а зв есмъ сътворилъ*, *I have created*; *и мѣла есмъ*, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я *сътворилъ*, ты *имѣла*, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличные). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *нельзя*, *there is not* (pret. *не было*, fut. *не будетъ*); *разсвѣтѣТЬ*, *it begins to dawn* (pret. *разсвѣлъ*, fut. *разсвѣтѣТЬ*); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (pret. *хотѣлось*).

*Forms derived from the verb* 53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причастіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣлопричастіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отлагольнос юмъ).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards voice, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. *бѣганіе*, *an habitual running*; *разбиваніе*, *a defeat*; *разбитіе*, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives *бѣгать*, *разбиватъ* and *разбить*).

*Conjugation.* 54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods, tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (правильные) and *irregular* (неправильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *ть* preceded by a vowel; e. g. *дѣлать*, *to make*; *гулять*, *to take a walk*; *имѣть*, *to have*; *говорить*, *to speak*; *колоть*, *to sting*; *тянуть*, *to draw*; *тереть*, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *ть* preceded by a consonant, or in *у*, *ти* and *ши*; e. g. *бить*, *to beat*; *брать*, *to take*; *слыть*, *to pass for*; *вести*, *to conduct*; *грызть*, *to gnaw*; *идти*, *to go*; *сѣть*, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *ть* (seldom in *у*, *ти*, *ши*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *й* (very rarely in *мъ* and *мъ*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *лъ* and sometimes in *з* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs *бýдъ* or *смѣнъ*, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *у* with the accent, or, without accent, in *у* after two or three consonants, in *о* after one consonant and in *и* after a vowel.

## CONJUGATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS,

FIRST									
I. INFINITIVE.		2d branch.		3rd branch.		4th branch.		SECOND	
MOODS.		TENSES.		NUMBER.		PERSONS.		TENSES.	
1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.						
атъ	оевътъ севътъ	consonant.	въвълъ	атъ	въвълъ	vowel	conson.	въвълъ	бъвълъ
ио	ую юю	ио	ю	ъю	ъю	ио	ю	чио	чио
иши	уешъ юешъ	иши	ши	ъешъ	ъешъ	иши	ши	чиши	чиши
они	уетъ юетъ	они	ти	ъетъ	ъетъ	они	ти	чиони	чиони
мы	аешъ	мы	ешъ	ъешъ	ъешъ	мы	ешъ	чиши	чиши
они	аевъ	они	евъ	ъевъ	ъевъ	они	евъ	чиони	чиони
мы	аевъ	мы	евъ	ъевъ	ъевъ	мы	евъ	чиши	чиши
они	ають	они	ють	ъють	ъють	они	ють	чиони	чиони
II. INDICATIVE.									
1. PRESENT.		2. PRETERIT.		3. FUTURE.		4. IMPERATIVE.		5. IMPERATIVE.	
и	т. н. f.	и	т. н. f.	и	т. н. f.	и	т. н. f.	и	т. н. f.
мы	аиль, о, а	мы	аиль, о, а	мы	аиль, о, а	мы	аиль, о, а	мы	аиль, о, а
они	аиль	они	аиль	они	аиль	они	аиль	они	аиль
мы	евали	мы	евали	мы	евали	мы	евали	мы	евали
они	евали	они	евали	они	евали	они	евали	они	евали
и	буду	и	стани	и	стани	и	стани	и	стани
мы	будешъ	мы	станишъ	мы	станишъ	мы	станишъ	мы	станишъ
они	будетъ	они	станинетъ	они	станинетъ	они	станинетъ	они	станинетъ
мы	будемъ	ор	станиемъ	мы	станиемъ	мы	станиемъ	мы	станиемъ
они	будете		станинете	они	станинете	они	станинете	они	станинете
они	будутъ		станинутъ	они	станинутъ	они	станинутъ	они	станинутъ
with the <i>infinitive</i> (of the <i>imperfect aspect</i> )									
и	ай	у	ю	ай	и	з	и	и	и
мы	айте	у	ите	айте	и	ите	и	и	и
они	айте	у	ите	айте	и	ите	и	и	и

## ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

Regular verbs. 55.—The *regular verbs* are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first conjugation* embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *ть* with one of the vowels *а*, *я* or *ю*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

	1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
<i>Infinitive:</i>	ать	овать	ять	ѣть
<i>Present:</i>	аю	ую	яю	ѣю

*Examples:* 1) *дѣлать*, to *make*, *дѣлую*; 2) *рисоватъ*, to *draw*, *рисую*; *плеватъ*, to *sput*, *плую*; 3) *гулять*, to *take a walk*, *гуляю*; 4) *имѣть*, to *have*, *имѣю*.

2. The *second conjugation* embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *ть* preceded by *и* or *о*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *иу*, *чу*, *шу* and *щу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

	1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
		б	ж				
	и	в ить		и	и	и	и
<i>Infinitive:</i>	ть	мѣть	ч ить	л ить	т ить	с ить	ст ить
	о	п ать	ш ать	з ать	к ать	х ать	ск ать
			щ				
				ф			

*Present:* ю . . лю . . у . . жу . . чу . . шу . . щу.

*Examples:* 1) *говорить*, to *speak*, *говорю*; *велѣть*, to *order*, *велю*; *колѣть*, to *sting*, *колю*; 2) *любить*, to *love*, *люблю*; *терпѣть*,

*to suffer*, терплю; *дремать*, to slumber, дремлю; 3) *тужить*, to grieve, тужу; *кричать*, to cry, кричу; 4) *водить*, to lead, вожу; *видеть*, to see, вижу; *мазать*, to anoint, мажу; 5) *платить*, to pay, плачу; *вертеть*, to turn, верчу; *плакать*, to weep, плачу; 6) *просить*, to ask, прошу; *висеть*, to be suspended, вишу; *пахать*, to cultivate, пашу; 7) *чистить*, to clean, чищу; *хрустеть*, to crack, хрущу; *искать*, to seek, ищу.

3. The *third conjugation* embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нуть* and in *ешь*, the first person of which is in *у* preceded by a palatal consonant (*и, ы*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 *branches*, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
<i>Infinitive:</i>	. . . . . нуть . . . . .	. . . . . ереть . . . . .
<i>Present:</i>	. . . . . иу . . . . .	. . . . . ру . . . . .

*Examples:* 1) *тянуть*, to draw, тяну; 2) *тереть*, to rub, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: *a)* from the first person in all the verbs of the I<sup>st</sup> and II<sup>nd</sup> conjugation, as also in those of the II<sup>nd</sup> in *омъ*, and in *амъ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *у* into *ешь*; *b)* from the infinitive in the verbs of the II<sup>nd</sup> conjugation ending in *уть*, *льть*, and in *амъ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *уть*, *льть* or *амъ* into *иши*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

Роды СВОИСТВОВАНИЯ	1.		2.		3.		4.	
	SINGULAR.							
1.	ю	у	ю	у				
2.	ешь	ешь	иши	иши				
3.	еть	еъ	итъ	итъ				
			PLURAL.					
1.	емъ	емъ	имъ	имъ				
2.	ете	ете	ите	ите				
3.	ютъ	утъ	ятъ	ятъ	(атъ)			
For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i> , 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i> , 2d br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)	For verbs of the III conjug. and for those in <i>амъ</i> , 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)	For verbs of the II conjug. 1st and 2d br. (except 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except in <i>амъ</i> )) (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)	For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)					

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *амъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the IIId conjugation. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the 1st and IIId conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *ть* into *ль* (*фем.* *ла*,  *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*). The inchoative verbs of the IIId conjugation syncopate the termination *нуль* into *ъ* (*фем.* *ла*,  *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. *сохъ*, *вяль* (*фем.* *сояла*, *вяла*, *neut. сояло*, *вяло*), instead of *соянуль*, *вянуль*, from *соянуть*, *to dry*; *вянуть*, *to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. *мёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *мёрзнуль*; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the *preterit* is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. *замёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *замёрзъ*, *to erect*, *воздвигъ* (instead of *замёрзнуль*).

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нуль*; e. g. *тянуль*, *двинуль*, from *тянуть*, *to draw*; *двинуть*, *to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the IIId conjugation also syncopate the termination of the *preterit*. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *у*, *в*, *и* or *и*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *ешь* or *ишь*:

a) into *у*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

b) into *о*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

c) into *и*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

d) into *й*, if the inflection *ешь* or *ишь* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *ишь* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *й*, e. g. *тайть*, to hide; *пойть*, to water; *клейть*, to paste; *imper.*: *тай*, *пой*, *клей*.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *ме* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes that of the future; e. g. *будемъ учиться*, let us study; *пойдемъ*, let us go, and sometimes adding the syllable *ме*, *пойдёмте*. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусť* or *да*, e. g. *пусť говорить*, let him speak; *да здравствуетъ*, let him live; *да будутъ*, let them be.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. *сдѣлай это я*, if I should do that; *сдѣлай это онъ*, if he were to do that; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner, the phrases: *сохрани Богъ*, God preserve! *дай Богъ*, God grant! take the place of the *optative* mood.

*Rem.* There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *я*; it is the irregular verb *лечь*, to lie down; *imper.*: *лягъ*, *pl. лягте*.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms of the conjugations of regular verbs.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS

CONJUGATIONS:	PARADIGMS:	I. INFINITIVE.			II. PRESENT.			III. PAST.		
		1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
FIRST	1.	дѣлать, to make. . . . .	дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	2.	тольковать, to explain. . . . .	толькую, тольку-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	3.	воевать, to war. . . . .	воюю, вою-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	4.	жевать, to chew. . . . .	жую, жу-ешь, ёть; ёмъ, ёте, ютъ							
	5.	гулять, to take a walk. . . . .	гуляю, гуля-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	6.	сѣять, to sow. . . . .	сѣю, сѣ-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow. . . . .	желтюю, желтѣ-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	8.	хвалить, to praise. . . . .	хвалю, хвал-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	9.	строить, to build. . . . .	строю, стро-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	10.	коѣтъ, to sting. . . . .	кою, коѣ-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
SECOND	11.	любить, to love. . . . .	люблю, люб-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	12.	дремать, to slumber. . . . .	дремлю, дрѣмл-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, ютъ							
	13.	мучить, to torment. . . . .	мучу, муч-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	14.	лѣдитъ, to tune. . . . .	лѣжу, лѣд-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	15.	вѣзать, to tie. . . . .	вѣжу, вѣж-ешь, еть; стъ, сте, уть							
	16.	платить, to pay. . . . .	платю, плат-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	17.	плакать, to weep. . . . .	плаку, плач-ишь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	18.	просить, to ask. . . . .	просю, прос-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
	19.	пишать, to write. . . . .	пишу, пиш-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	20.	чистить, to clean. . . . .	чистю, чист-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ять							
THIRD	21.	искать, to seek. . . . .	ищу, ищ-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	22.	танѣть, to draw. . . . .	таню, тан-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	23.	сѣхнуть, to dry. . . . .	сѣхну, сѣхн-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	24.	вѣнѣть, to fade. . . . .	вѣню, вѣн-ешь, еть; емъ, ете, уть							
	25.	тереть, to rub. . . . .	тру, трѣш-ешь, ёть; ёмъ, ёте, уть							

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *osамъ* and *esамъ*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *os* or *es* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *тольковать*, *воевать* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толькую*, *воюю*; while *жевать* (parad. 4) has *жую*; and also *коѣтъ*, *кую*; *плевать*, *то ѿїтъ*, *плюю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the IIId and IIIId conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

## GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

## C A T I V E.

II. PRETERIT.			III. FUTURE.			III. IMPERATIVE.	
Singular.			Plural.			Sing.	Plur.
<i>и, икъ, онъ (и. онъ, с. онъ)</i>	<i>мас.</i>	<i> neut.</i>	<i> fem.</i>	<i> 3 genders.</i>			
дѣлать,	ало,	ала;	... .	дѣлали		дѣлай,	йтѣ.
толковать,	ало,	ала;	... .	толковали		толкуй,	йтѣ.
воевать,	ало,	ала;	... .	воевали		войй,	йтѣ.
жевать,	ало,	ала;	... .	жевали		жуй,	йтѣ.
гулять,	ало,	ала;	... .	гуляли		гуляй,	йтѣ.
сѣять,	ало,	ала;	... .	сѣяли		сѣй,	йтѣ.
желтѣть,	ѣло,	ѣла;	... .	желтѣли		желтѣй,	йтѣ.
<i>и, икъ, онъ (и. онъ, с. онъ)</i>	<i>мас.</i>	<i> neut.</i>	<i> fem.</i>	<i> 3 genders.</i>			
хвалить,	йло,	йла;	... .	хвалилъ		хвалий,	йтѣ.
стрѣять,	йло,	йла;	... .	стрѣяли		строй,	йтѣ.
кололъ,	бло,	блла;	... .	кололи		коллъ,	йтѣ.
любить,	йло,	йла;	... .	любили		любй,	йтѣ.
дремѣть,	бло,	блла;	... .	дремѣли		дремлъ,	йтѣ.
мучить,	йло,	йла;	... .	мучили		мучъ	ьтѣ.
лѣдить,	йло,	йла;	... .	лѣдили		лѣль,	ьтѣ.
вязать,	ало,	ала;	... .	вязали		вяжъ,	йтѣ.
платить,	йло,	йла;	... .	платили		плати,	йтѣ.
плакать,	ало,	ала;	... .	плакали		плачь,	ьтѣ.
просить,	йло,	йла;	... .	просили		просй,	йтѣ.
писать,	бло,	блла;	... .	писали		пишнй,	йтѣ.
чистить,	йло,	йла;	... .	чистили		чистн,	итѣ.
искать,	бло,	блла;	... .	искали		иши,	йтѣ.
<i>и, икъ, онъ</i>	<i>мас.</i>	<i> neut.</i>	<i> fem.</i>	<i> 3 genders.</i>			
тянуть,	ўло,	ўла;	... .	тянули		тянй,	йтѣ.
согнъ,	хло,	хла;	... .	согнали		согнн,	итѣ.
взять,	йло,	йла;	... .	вяли		вянь,	ьтѣ.
тѣръ,	рло,	рла;	... .	терли		три	йтѣ.

бѣтъ отъстану (онъ, сѣтъ; емъ, сѣтъ) with the *infinitive*.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted *родѣтъ*, *to bring forth*, *pret. родїлъ*, *f. родїло*, *pl. родїли*, and some verbs of the IIId conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun *са*, as *родилсѧ*, *he is born*, *заперсѧ*, *it shut itself up*; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (*родиласѧ*, *запердось*, &c.). This transferring happens above all in the mono-syllable verbs, as *звалсѧ*, *взласѧ*, *далсѧ*, &c.

First conjugation. \*According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амъ*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *оватъ* and *еватъ*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амъ*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, <i>pres.</i> болтаю.	Уповать, to hope, <i>pres.</i> уповаю.
Вѣнчать, to crown, вѣнчайо.	Обожать, to adore, обожаю.
Дерзать, to dare, дерзайо.	Отвѣтчать, to answer, отвѣчайо.
Думать, to think, думайо.	Обѣщать, to promise, обѣщаю.
Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.	Отдѣльвать, to finish, отдѣльваю.
Пытать, to assay, пытаю.	Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.
Печатать, to print, печатаю.	Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.
Работать, to work, работаю.	Надмевать, to render proud, надмевайо.
Питать, to nourish, питайо.	Обуревать, to agitate, обуревайо.
Нюхать, to smell, нюхайо.	Отмѣщевать, to avenge, отмѣщевайо.
Терзать, to worry, терзайо.	Здороваться, to salute, здороваю.
Умничать, to sublilize, умничайо.	Касаться, to concern, касаю.
Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.	Намѣреваться, to purpose, -вайо.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ыватъ*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *ывало* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *оватъ* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *оватъ* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ов* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to coo, <i>pres.</i> воркую.	Зимовать, to winter, <i>pres.</i> зимую.
Торговать, to traffic, торгую.	Именовать, to name, именую.
Баловать, to cocker, балую.	Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлю.
Ковать, to forge, куй.	Рисовать, to draw, рисую.
Сновать, to warp, спуй.	Образовать, to form, образую.
Совѣтъ, to shove, суй.	Рѣдовать, to rejoice, рѣдую.

Требовать, to require, *pres.* требую. Приветствовать, to welcome, *pres.* Чувствовать, to feel, чувстую. пригутствую. Советовать, to counsel, советую. Повиноваться, to obey, повиную-  
Миловать, to have pity, милую. юсь.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуревать*, *отмщевать* and *наморреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *евать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> горюю.	Клевать, to peck, <i>pres.</i> клюю.
Дневать, to pass the day, дниую.	Плевать, to spit, плюю.
Утреневать, to pass the morning.	Блевать, to vomit, блюю.
Малевать, to paint, малюю. [-нюю.]	Пеклевать, to bolt, пеклюю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *ую* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, <i>pres.</i> врачую.	Тушевать, to wash a drawing, <i>pres.</i> тушую.
Кочевать, to nomadize, кочую.	Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail, хвощую.
Ночевать, to pass the night, ночую.	Межевать, to survey, межую.
Бушевать, to howl, бушую.	Потчевать, to regale, потчую.

This last verb is also written *подчизовать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *подчиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ять* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оять*, in which *ять* is contracted from *евать*. These verbs have the present in *яю*. Such are:

Валить, to roll, <i>pres.</i> валю.	Утолять, to quench, <i>pres.</i> утолю.
Вонять, to stink, воню.	Извинять, to excuse, извиню.
Кашлять, to cough, кашлю.	Повёрять, to verify, повёряю.
Мянуть, to change, мяню.	Утомлять, to fatigue, утомлю.
Козырять, to trump, козырю.	Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.
Кривлять, to contort, кривлю.	Зиять, to gape, зияю.
Терять, to lose, теряю.	Паять, to solder, паяю.
Стрелять, to shoot, стреляю.	Сиять, to shine, сияю.
Являться, to show, являю.	Устроить, to arrange, устрою.
Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь.	Удвоить, to double, удвою.

According to the 6th paradigm (съять) are conjugated verbs in *льть* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of *стоять* and *боиться*, which belong to the first branch of the IId conjugation). They have the present in *ю*; such are:

Ба́ять, to speak, <i>pres.</i> баю	Та́ять, to thaw, <i>pres.</i> таю
Бле́ять, to bleat, блею	Ча́ять, to hope, чаю
Вопи́ть, to cry, воплю	Чу́ять, to hear, чую
Вла́ять, to blow, влю	Ка́яться, to do penance, каюсь
Гра́ять, to croak, граю	Мая́ться, to languish, маюсь
Ле́ять, to cocker, леляю	Смъя́ться, to laugh, смъюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (желт́ять) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in *льть*, which have the present in *лю*, (the non-inchoative in *льть* belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Ба́лт́ять, to grow white, <i>pres.</i> бывлю	Рыж́ять, to grow rufous, <i>pres.</i> рыжю
Голуб́ять, to become azure, голублю	Груб́ять, to grow harsh, грублю
Солов́ять, to grow light bay, соловлю	Черн́ять, to grow black, чернлю
Ряб́ять, to become freckled, раблю	Пот́ять, to sweat, потлю
Красн́ять, to grow red, красню	Пламен́ять, to flame, пламенлю
Влад́ять, to possess, владлю	Кол́ять, to starve, коллю
Гла́зять, to gaze, глазлю.	Косн́ять, to linger, косню
Гове́ть, to keep fast, говлю	Печатл́ять, to impress, печатлю
Дол́ять, to overcome, доллю	Им́еть, to have, имлю
Жал́ять, to have pity, жаллю	Ум́еть, to know, умлю
Сине́ть, to grow blue, синлю	Рад́ять, to take care, радлю
Слад́ять, to grow grey, сядлю	Бол́ять, to ache, боллю.

The verb *болеть* belongs also to the first branch of the IId conjugation, having in the present *болю* and *боли́шь*, *боли́шь* and *боли́шь*, &c. — The prepositional verb *выздороветь*, to recover (perfect aspect of *выздоровливать*), belongs also to the second branch of the IId conjugation, having in the future *выздоровлю* and *выздоровлю*, but only in the first person, the others being: *выздоровишь*, *еть*, &c.

According to the 8th paradigm (хвали́ть) are conjugated verbs in *льть* preceded by a palatal consonant (л, н, р), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in *льть*, *льть*, *рльть*, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бран- ишишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишишь
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишишь.
Верить, to believe, верю, веришишь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришишь.	Мерзить, to abhor, мерзю, мерзяшишь
Смолять, to pitch, смолю, смолишишь.	Тузить, to stiff, тузю, тузяшишь.
Делить, to divide, деляю, делишишь.	Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, куде- шишь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишишь.	Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесишишь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, драз- нишишь.	Велеть, to order, велю, веляшишь
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишишь	Гореть, to burn, горю, горяшишь
Курить, to smoke, курю, куришишь	Звенеть, to sound, звеню, звенишишь.
Варить, to boil, варю, варяшишь	Смотреть, to look, смотрю, смотряшишь.

And also *мыслить*, to *think*, which changes *c* into *u* in the first person of the present: *мышлю*, *мыслишь*, &c.: *imperative*: *мысли*; and the prepositional verb *изострить*, to *sharpen* (perfect aspect of *изощрять*), which changes *cm* into *u*, in the first person of the future: *изощрю*, *изостришь*, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (стрóитъ) are conjugated verbs in *utъ* preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in *оятъ*, observing that the verbs in *utъ* of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in *ü*. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двою; <i>imp.</i> двой	Стóнть, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стóю; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Дойть, to milk, дою; дой	Свóнть, to appropriate, свóю; свой
Клеить, to glue, клею; клей.	Покóнть, to give repose, покóю; покой
Пойть, to give to drink, пою; пой.	Ройтъся, to swarm, рою; ройся.
Кроить, to cut, крою; крои	Стáйтъся, to fly in flocks, стаюсь;
Струить, to pour, струю; струй.	стáйся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; тай.	Бойтъся, to fear, боюсь; бойся.
	Стóйтъ, to stand, стою; стой.

According to the 10th paradigm (колóтъ) are conjugated verbs in *omъ*, as two verbs in *amъ*; these are:

Бороть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, бор- ешь.	Пороть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порешь
Бороться, to wrestle, борюсь, бор- ешь	[решься. Глаголать, to say, глаголю, глаго- лешь
Полоть, to weed, полю, полешь.	Орать, to plough, орю, брешь.

And also *молоть*, to *grind*, which has in the present: *мeliю*, &c. and in the imperative *мeliй* (instead of *молю*, *моли*, not to be confounded with *молю*, *мoliшишь*,

мой, from **молить**, *to pray*). — The verb **орать** in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (**любить**) are conjugated verbs in **имо** preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in **бъть**, **мъть**, **пъть**, which insert the consonant **л** in the first person of the present (with the exception of **клеймить** and **коймить**, which belong to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, of **имбъто** and **умбъто**, which belong to the 4th branch of the I<sup>st</sup> conjugation, and of **шибъть**, which belongs to the first branch of the III<sup>d</sup> conjugation). Such are:

Рубить, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю, рубиши	Ръзвѣться, to sport, <i>pres.</i> ръзвлюсь,
Знобить, to chill, зноблю, знобиши	ръзвиши
Грубить, to be saucy, грублю, гру- башь	Скорбѣть, to sorrow, скорблю, рбіши.
Ловить, to catch, ловлю, ловиши	Свербѣть, to itch, сверблю, свербашь
Готовить, to prepare, готовлю, готов- иши.	Гремѣть, to thunder, гремлю, гремиши.
Дымить, to smoke, дымлю, дымиши.	Шумѣть, to racket, шумлю, шумиши.
Кормить, to nourish, кормлю, кормиши	Кипѣть, to boil, киплю, кипиши.
Топить, to heat, топлю, топиши	Корпѣть, to work, корплю, корпиши
Лѣпить, to mould, лѣплю, лѣпиши.	Сопѣть, to wheeze, соплю, сопиши.
Графѣть, to rule, графлю, графиши	Скрипѣть, to creak, скриплю, скри- пиши.
Трафѣть, to hit, трафлю, трафиши	Терпѣть, to suffer, терплю, терпиши.
Нравиться, to please, нравлюсь, нравиши	Храпѣть, to snore, храплю, храпиши.
	Хрипѣть, to croak, хриплю, хрипиши.
	Шипѣть, to hiss, шиплю, шипиши.

And also the prepositional verb **умертвить**, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of **умерщвлѣть**), which changes **т** into **щ** in the first person of the future: **умерщвлю**, **умертвишь**, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (**дремаѣть**) are conjugated verbs in **батъ**, **матъ**, **памъ**, which insert also the consonant **л** in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derived from this first person. These are:

Зыбать, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю, зы- блешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зобаю.]
Колебать, to shake, колеблю, коле- блешь.	Зобаѣть, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю and Капаѣть, to drop, каплю and капаю.
Клепать, to impute, клеплю, кле- племашь.	Крапаѣть, to dash, краплю and крапаю.
Трепать, to scutch, треплю, трѣплемашь.	Хромаѣть, to be lame, хромлю and Хромаю.
Щепать, to chip, щеплю, щѣплемашь.	Хромаѣть, to pinch, щиплю, щѣплемашь.
Щипать, to pinch, щиплю, щѣплемашь.	Сыпать, to strew, сыплю, сыплемашь ( <i>impf.</i> сыпь, instead of сыплю).

And also *имать*, *to take*, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимать*, *to receive*, *pres.* *пріємлю* and *принимаю*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (мучить) are conjugated verbs in *имъ* and *амъ* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *шльть* (with the exception of the verbs in *атъ*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

Нéжить, to nurse, <i>pres.</i> нéжу, нéжишь.	Сушить, to dry, <i>pres.</i> сушу, сушишь.
[дружíшь.]	Лежать, to lie, лежу, лежишь.
Дружить, to make friends, дружу, дружишь.	Держать, to hold, держу, держишь.
Кóрчить, to shrivel, кóрчу, кóрчишь.	Кричать, to cry, кричу, кричишь.
Страшить, to frighten, страшу, страшьшишь.	Молчать, to be silent, молчу, молчишь.
Вошить, to wax, вошу, вошишь.	Стучать, to knock, стучу, стучишь.
Лощить, to gloss, лощу, лощишь.	Пышать, to burn, пышу, пышишь.
Служить, to serve, служу, служишь.	Дышать, to breathe, дышу, дышишь.
Лечить, to cure, лечу, лечишь.	Пищать, to pipe, пишу, пишишь.
Учить, to teach, учу, учишь.	Трещать, to burst, трещу, трещишь.
	Кишасть, to swarm, кишу, кишишь.

According to the 14th paradigm (ладить) are conjugated verbs in *дить* and *зить*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *дъть* (with the exception of *зудить*, *дудить*, *мерзить*, *тузить* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *đ* and *з* into *ж* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *дить* have retained the Slavonian change of *đ* into *жđ* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вредить, to hurt, <i>pres.</i> вреду, вредишь.	Узять, to narrow, <i>pres.</i> ужу, узишь.
Гладить, to even, гладу, гладишь.	Морозить, to freeze, морожу, морозишь.
Щадить, to spare, щаду, щадишь.	Возить, to carry, возу, возишь.
Родить, to bring forth, рожу, родишь.	Видеть, to see, вижу, (impf. видъ and виждъ).
Лудить, to tin, лужу, лудишь.	Глядеть, to look, гляжу, глядишь.
Нудить, to compel, нужу, нудишь.	Сидеть, to sit, сижу, сидишь.
Будить, to waken, бужу, будишь.	Смердеть, to stink, смержу, смердишь.
Водить, to lead, вожу, водишь.	Убеждить, to persuade, уважду, убедишь.
Сердить, to anger, сержу, сердишь.	Наградить, to reward, награжду, наградишь.
Судить, to judge, сужу, судишь.	Возбудить, to excite, возбужду, возбудишь.
Ходить, to go, хожу, ходишь.	Упредить, to prevent, упрежду,
Грузить, to load, гружу, грузишь.	[упредишь.]
Близить, to approach, близу, близишь.	
Грозить, to menace, грожу, грозишь.	
Низить, to lower, низу, низишь.	

According to the 15th paradigm (взять) are conjugated some verbs in *затв*, *гатв* and *датв*, which change *з*, *г* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мазать, to anoint, *pres.* *мажу*, *мажешь*. Гладить, to gnaw, *pres.* *глажу*, *глажишь*.

Рязать, to cut, *рэжу*, *рэжешь*.

Казать, to show, *кажу*, *кажешь*.

Казаться, to seem, *кажусь*, *кажешься*.

Низать, to thread, *нижу*, *нижешь*.

Лизать, to lick, *лижу*, *лижешь*.

Брызгать, to splash, *брэжу*, *брэжешь*.

And thus the following verbs which

belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.

Двигать, to move, *двигу* and *двигаю*.

Тягаться, to be at law, *тяжусь* and *тягаясь*.

Стругать, to plane, *стружу* and *стругаю* (instead of *струганю*).

According to the 16th paradigm (платить) are conjugated verbs in *тить*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *тьть* (with the exception of some verbs in *тить* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *т* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Винтить, to screw, *pres.* *винчу*, *винтишь*.

Золотить, to gild, *золочу*, *золотишь*.

Заботить, to be busy, *забочу*, *заботишь*.

Портить, to spoil, *порчу*, *портишь*.

Мутить, to muddy, *мучу*, *мутишь*.

Крутить, to twist, *кручу*, *крутишь*.

Метить, to aim, *мечу*, *метишь*.

Тратить, to spend, *трачу*, *тратишь*.

Катить, to roll, *pres.* *качу*, *катишь*.

Молотить, to thrash, *молочу*, *молотишь*.

Святить, to light, *свячу*, *святишь*.

Шутить, to joke, *шучу*, *шутишь*.

Колотить, to knock, *колочу*, *колотишь*.

Вертеть, to turn, *верчу*, *вертишь*.

Лететь, to fly, *лечу*, *летишь*.

Пыхтеть, to puff, *пыхчу*, *пыхтишь*.

According to the 17th paradigm (плакать) are conjugated several verbs in *тить* and *кать*, which change *т* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прятать, to hide, *pres.* *прячу*, *прячешь*.

[борчешь.]

Бормотать, to murmur, *бормочу*, *бормочешь*.

Лепетать, to chatter, *лепечу*, *лепечешь*.

Топтать, to tread down, *топчу*, *топчешь*.

[ибочешь.]

Хлопотать, to bustle, *хлопочу*, *хлопочешь*.

Хохотать, to laugh aloud, *хохочу*, *хохочешь*.

Шептать, to whisper, *шепчу*, *шепчешь*.

Щекотать, to tickle, *щекочу*, *щекочешь*.

Кудахтать, to cackle, *pres.* *кудакчу*, *кудакчешь*.

Кликать, to call, *кличу*, *кличешь*.

Скакать, to leap, *скаку*, *скакешь*.

Тыкать, to thurst, *тычу*, *тычешь*.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.

Алкать, to long, *алчу* and *алкаю*.

Икать, to hiccup, *икчу* and *икяю*.

Хныкать, to sob, *хнычу* and *хныкаю*.

Метать, to cast, *мечу* and *метаю*.

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *cumb* (with the exception of *кудесить* and *уудесить* which belong to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сльть*, which change *c* into *u* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вáкнуть, to black, <i>pres.</i> вáкну, вáкнешь.	Трúснуть, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трúшу, трúсишь.
Вéснить, to weigh, вéшу, вéсишь.	Росéсть, to bedew, рошú, росíшь.
Квáснить, to leaven, квáшу, квáсишь.	Гасéсть, to put out, гашú, гасíшь.
Красíсть, to colour, крашú, красíшь.	Мвáснить, to knead, мвáшú, мвáсишь.
Косíсть, to mow, кошú, косíшь.	Носíсть, to bear, ношú, носишь.
Бáснить, to madden, бáшú, бáсишь	Висéсть, to hang, вишú, висíшь.

According to the 19th paradigm (писать) are conjugated some verbs in *camb* and *xamb*, which change *c* and *x* into *u* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плясáть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшú, пляшешь.	And thus the two following verbs, which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Пойáснить, to gird, пояшú, пояшешь.	Колыхáть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колыхшу and колыхаю.
Тесáть, to hew, тешú, тешешь.	Махáть, to fan, машú, машешь and махаю.
Чесáть, to comb, чешú, чешешь.	
Брехáть, to yelp, брешú, брешешь.	
Пахáть, to plough, пашú, пашешь	

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *stum* and the non-inchoatives in *stum*, which change *st* into *u* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *tum*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *m* into *u*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Грустíть, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грущú, грустíшь.	Претíть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прещú, претíшь.
Гостíть, to visit, гошú, гостíшь.	Святíть, to sanctify, свяшú, святíшь.
Крестíть, to christen, крещú, крестíшь.	Сытíть, to satiate, сыщú, сытíшь.
Мостíть, to floor, мощú, мостíшь.	Хитíть, to ravish, хищú, хитíшь.
Честíть, to treat, чещú, честíшь.	Посвятíть, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посвящú, посвятíшь.
Блестíть, to shine, блещú, блестíшь.	Укротíть, to appease, укрошú, укротíшь.
Свистíть, to whistle, свищú, свистíшь.	Сократíть, to shorten, сокращú, сократíшь.
Хрустíть, to cranch, хрущú, хрустíшь.	Просвятíть, to enlighten, просвящú, просвятíшь.
Простíть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прощú, простíшь.	Возвращíть, to return, возвращú, возвращíшь.
Пустíть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пущú, пущíшь.	
Богатíть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богашú, богатíшь.	

The verbs *простить*, *пустить*, *посвятить*\* and following, are the perfect aspects of *проща́ть*, *пускáть*, *послы́щать*, *укро-щáть*, *сокращáть*, *просвьщáть*, *возвращáть*; thus the inflections *прошу́*, *пушу́*, *посвьшу́*, *укрошу́*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st, paradigm (*искáть*) are conjugated some verbs in *скать* and *стать*, as well as four verbs in *тать*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *ш*, for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плескать, to splash, <i>pres.</i> <i>плещу́</i> , <i>скреплéшь</i>	Скрежетать, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> <i>скреже- жешу́</i> , <i>скрежéшь</i>
Рыскать, to run, <i>рышу́</i> , <i>рыщешь</i> .	Трепетать, to tremble, <i>трепещу́</i> , <i>трепéшь</i>
Полоскать, to rinse, <i>полощу́</i> , <i>поло- щешь</i> .	
Свистать, to whistle, <i>свисту́</i> , <i>свисти- шь</i>	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Хлестать, to lash, <i>хлещу́</i> , <i>хлéшь</i>	Блестать, shine, <i>блещу́</i> , <i>блéшь</i> and <i>блестяю</i>
Хвостать, to brush, <i>хвощу́</i> , <i>хвóшь</i>	
Клеветать, to slander, <i>клевещу́</i> , <i>клевéшь</i>	
Роптать, to murmur, <i>ропщу́</i> , <i>роп- шешь</i>	Прыскать, to sprinkle, <i>прышу́</i> and <i>прыскаю</i>

Third con-  
jugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тиянуть*) are conjugated verbs in *хнуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *ютъ*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ху* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тонуть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> <i>тону́</i> , <i>тонешь</i>	Кинуть, to cast, <i> fut.</i> <i>кину́</i> , <i>кинешь</i>
Рахнуться, to be crazed, <i>рахнусь</i> , <i>рахнёшься</i> .	Вернуть, to turn, <i>верну́</i> , <i>вернешь</i>
Жаждать, to desire, <i>жажду́</i> , <i>жаж- дешь</i> .	Свистнуть, to whistle, <i>свисту́</i> , <i>свист- ишь</i>
Орать, to cny, <i>ору́</i> , <i>орешь</i>	Грянуть, to thunder, <i>гряну́</i> , <i>грянешь</i>
Сосать, to suck, <i>сосу́</i> , <i>сосешь</i> .	Глянуть, to look, <i>гляну́</i> , <i>глянешь</i>
Стонать, to groan, <i>стону́</i> , <i>стонешь</i> .	Двинуть, to move, <i>двину́</i> , <i>двинешь</i> .
Реветь, to roar, <i>реву́</i> , <i>ревешь</i> .	Обмануть, to cheat, <i>обману́</i> , <i>обма- нешь</i>

The verb *стонать* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стону́*, *стонешь*, and *стоняю́*, *стоняешь*, &c. The verb *орать*, in the sense of *to plough*, belongs to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сóхнуть and вя́нуть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *нуль* in *з* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *лз* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*). Such are:

Блёкнуть, to fade, <i>pret</i> блёкъ, <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>	Пахнуть, to smell, <i>pret</i> пахъ, <i>хло</i> , <i>хла</i>
Забнуть, to freeze, <i>злъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>	Мокнуть, to grow wet, <i>мокъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>
Киснуть, to turn sour, <i>кисъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>	Взинуть, to sink in, <i>вязъ</i> , <i>лз</i> , <i>ла</i>
Мерзнуть, to freeze, <i>мёрзъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i> .	Гаснуть, to go out, <i>гасъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>
Гибнуть, to perish, <i>гибъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>	Тихнуть, to grow still, <i>тихъ</i> , <i>хло</i> , <i>хла</i> .
Дохнуть, to die, <i>дохъ</i> , <i>хло</i> , <i>хла</i>	Стыннуть, to cool, <i>стылъ</i> , <i>ло</i> , <i>ла</i>

And also the prepositional verb *ушибить*, *to contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибатъ*), which has in the future *ушибу*, *ушибёшь*, and in the preterit *ушибъ*, *ушибло*, *ушибла*, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (терéть) are conjugated verbs in *ереть*, which have in the present *py*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мерéть* and *перéть* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

б, to die, <i>pres</i> мру, мрёшь; <i>pret</i> мёръ, мерла, рло; рли	
Перéть, to press, — пру, прёшь; — пérъ, перла, рло, рли.	

And also the verb *стертъ*, *pres.* стру, стрёшь; *pret.* стёръ, рла, рло, which now is used only with a preposition, as: *простёрть*, *распростёрть*, *to extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *mb* preceded by a vowel; 2) some disyllabic verbs in *mb*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *эмъ*, *смъ*, *чъ*, *ти* and *ши*), as is seen in the following table.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are: (See page 142.)

## CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.		III. IMPERATIVE.		Passive participle.*			
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.		2. Iterative aspect.		1. PRESENT (or FUTURE). Singular. Plural.		2. PRETERIT. Sing. Plur.		Full termination.	
I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.									
Брать, to shave		брать, брь		брать, ила, яо; ли		брать, ире.		брать, ире.	
Дуть, to blow		дуть, ай		дуть, юа, юи		дуть, ире.		дуть, ире.	
Унос (одура), to put shoes		унос, ю		унос, юи		унос, юи.		унос, юи.	
Петь, to sing		петь, ино		петь, ито		петь, ито.		петь, ито.	
Вести, to bow		вести, во		вести, мио, яо; ли		вести, ито, ире.		вести, ито, ире.	
Крыть, to cover		крыть, кро		крыть		крыть		крыть	
Мыть, to wash		мыть, мо		мыть, ито, юти		мыть		мыть	
Хлестать		хлест, хо		хлест, ито		хлест, ито.		хлест, ито.	
Плакать		плако, ро		плако, ро		плако, ро.		плако, ро.	
Гнить, to putrefy		гнить, гни		гнить, ила		гнить, ила.		гнить, ила.	
Бить, to beat		бить, би		бить, ито		бить, ито.		бить, ито.	
Шить, to sew		шить, ши		шить, ито		шить, ито.		шить, ито.	
Шнурить		шнур, ив		шнур, ито, юти		шнур, ито, юти.		шнур, ито, юти.	
Лить, to pour		лито, ии		лито, ии		лито, ии.		лито, ии.	
Хлить, to drink		хлить, ии		хлить, ии		хлить, ии.		хлить, ии.	
Хест (ховить), to repose		хест, ии		хест, ии		хест, ии.		хест, ии.	
Жить, to live		жить, жи		жить, ито		жить, ито.		жить, ито.	
Плавать, to navigate		плават, плав		плават, плав, мио; ми		плават, мио; ми		плават, мио; ми	
Славить, to be reputed		славить, слав		славить, слав		славить, слав		славить, слав	
Сознать, to grow cold.		сознать, созн		сознать, созн		сознать, созн		сознать, созн	
Делать, to build		делать, земля		делать, земля; юти, юти		делать, земля; юти, юти		делать, земля; юти, юти	

More common v. a. l.

## 2. DISSYLLABIC VERBS.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.		III. IMPERATIVE.	
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.		1. PRESENT (or FUTURE). Sing. Plural.		2. PRETERIT. Sing. Plur.	
2. Iterative aspect.		3. VERBS WITH AN IRREGULAR TERMINATION.		III. IMPERATIVE.	
Пе́сти, to carry	—	пое́сти, бе́ст	—	вё́ст, зя́б, лё; лн	ве́ст, ите ·
Полза́ти, to crawl	—	полза́ти, по́з	ёне, ётъ; ёнъ, ётъ	по́зять, ·	по́зять, ите ·
Грызти, to gnaw	—	грызти, гра́з	—	грызть, маза, ло; лн	грызти, ите ·
Лази́ти, to climb	—	лази́ти, лаз	—	лази́ти, лаза, ло; лн	лази́ти, ите ·
Се́рви́ти (сервиро́ти), to open	—	се́рви́ти, серв	е́нъ, етъ; енъ, етъ	е́рви́ти, ·	е́рви́ти, ите ·
Нести́, to bring	—	не́сти, не́с	—	е́рви́ти, са́б, ло; лн	е́рви́ти, ите ·
Наси́ти, to pasture	—	на́сить, на́с	—	на́сить, ·	на́сить, ите ·
Тра́сти, to shake.	—	тра́сти, тра́с	—	тра́стъ, ·	тра́стъ, ите ·
Гре́бти or Гре́бти, to row.	—	гре́бти, гре́б	—	гре́бъ, ба́с,	гре́бъ, ите ·
Ска́рбить, to scrape	—	ска́рбить, скре́б	—	скре́бъ, ·	скре́бъ, ите ·
Бо́рти, to butt.	—	бо́рти, бо́д	—	бо́дъ, ·	бо́дъ, ите ·
Ба́сить, to keep	—	боя́дзить, боя́д	е́нъ, етъ; ёнъ, ётъ	боя́дзить, ба́с, ло; лн	боя́дзить, ите ·
Бра́зти, to ramble	—	бра́зти, бра́д	—	бра́зть, ·	бра́зть, ите ·
Беси́ти, to read.	—	безу́, ве́з	—	безу́, ла́я, ло; лн	безу́, ите ·
Ка́нти, to lay.	—	ка́нти, ка́н	—	ка́нти, ла́я, ло; лн	ка́нти, ите ·
И́лести, perf. asp. to fall.	—	и́лести, и́ла́й	—	и́лести, ла́я, ·	и́лести, ите ·
Прядти, to spin	—	прядти, пряд	—	прядти, ла́я, ло; лн	прядти, ите ·
Гра́зти, to go.	—	гра́зти, гра́з	—	гра́зти, ла, ло; лн	гра́зти, ите ·
Кра́дти, to steal	—	кра́дти, кра́д	—	кра́дти, ла, ло; лн	кра́дти, ите ·
Сто́ити, perf. asp. to sit.	—	сто́ити, са́д	е́нъ, етъ; ёнъ, ётъ	сто́ити, ла, лн	сто́ити, ите ·
Ма́стити, to perturb	—	ма́стити, ма́ст	—	ма́стити, ла, лн	ма́стити, ите ·
Ме́стити, to sweep	—	ме́стити, ме́ст	и́нъ, и́тъ; ёнъ, ётъ	ме́стити, ла, лн	ме́стити, ите ·
Дави́ти, to press	—	да́вти, да́в	гне́з, гне́з	да́вти, ·	да́вти, ите ·
Фа́ти, to plait	—	фа́ти, фа́т	ла́зу, ла́з	фа́ти, ·	фа́ти, ите ·
Цве́ти, to flower	—	це́вти, цве́т	—	це́вти, ·	це́вти, ите ·
По́иски (поиски), to find out	—	по́иски, по́ис	—	по́иски, ·	по́иски, ите ·
Чи́тати (чи́тати), to count	—	чи́тати, чи́т	чи́т, чи́т	чи́тати, ·	чи́тати, ите ·



Знать, to know, I 1, <i>pres</i> знаю,	Темнеть, to darken, II 1, <i>pres</i> темню
знаяшь	Басть, to wake, — балю
Пхать, to push, — пхяю	Зреть, to see, — зрю
Чкать, to clash, — чкяю	Мжить, to twinkle, II 3 <i>pres</i> мжу,
Греть, to warm, I 4, <i>pres</i> грю	мжишь
Зреть, to ripen, — зрю	Мшить, to cover with moss, — мшу
Млеть, to be stupefied, — млю	Тщиться, to endeavour, — тщусь
Прятать, to stew, — прю	Мчать, to hurry, — мчу
Рдуть, to redden, — рдю	Нзить (пронзить), to pierce, II 4,
Смывать, to dare, — смю	<i>pres</i> -нжу, изишь
Спять, to ripen, — спю	Льстить, to flatter, II 7, <i>pres</i> льшю,
Тлеть, to rot, — тлю	льстишь
Длить, to prolong, II 1, <i>pres</i> длю	Мстить, to avenge, — мшу,
длишь	мстишь
Дметь, to swell, — дмю	Гнуть, to bend, III 1 <i>pres</i> гну, гнешь
Злить, to irritate, — злю	Льнушь, to stick, — льнъ
Мнить, to think, — мю	Мзгнуть, to turn sour, — мзгну
(нниться, to dream, <i>impers</i> снится)	Менуть, to shut, — мкну
Тлить to corrupt, — тлю,	Снуть, to fall asleep, — сну
тмишь	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation

Delineation of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

I. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as *кинуть*, to throw, *плевать*, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as *идти* and *ходить*, to go, *нести* and *носить*, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, *to make*; *имѣть*, *to have*.

2. The *prepositional verbs*, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derived from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

## DELINEATION OF VERBS.

I. SIMPLE VERBS.	II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.
1. The <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs have 2 aspects	1. Formed from the <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects
1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>iterative.</i>	1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>perfect of duration.</i>
<i>дѣлать.</i> <i>дѣлыватъ</i>	<i>обдѣлывать.</i> <i>обдѣлать</i>
3. The <i>defective</i> simple verbs have only the <i>imperfect</i> aspect	2. Formed from the <i>defective</i> simple verbs, they have only the aspect <i>perfect of duration</i>
<i>имѣть</i>	<i>возѣмѣть</i>
3. The <i>complete</i> simple verbs have the 3 aspects	3. Formed from the <i>complete</i> simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects
1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>iterative.</i> 3) <i>perf. of unity</i>	1) <i>imperfect.</i> 2) <i>perf. of durat.</i> 3) <i>perf. of unity</i>
<i>кидѣть</i> <i>кидыватъ</i> <i>кинуть</i>	<i>закидыватъ</i> <i>закидать</i> <i>закинуть</i>
4. The <i>double</i> simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects	4. Formed from the <i>double</i> simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects
1) <i>definite imp.</i> 2) <i>indefin imp.</i> 3) <i>iterative.</i>	a) from the <i>definite</i> b) from the <i>indefinite</i> verb
<i>нести.</i> <i>носить</i> <i>нашивать.</i>	1) <i>imperf.</i> 2) <i>perfect.</i> 1) <i>imperf.</i> 2) <i>perfect.</i>
	<i>выносить</i> <i>вынести</i> <i>вынѣшивать</i> <i>выносить</i>

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *ть*, *чъ*, *ти* or *ши*, and the latter in *въсѧть*, *иевѧть*, *сѧть* or

*атъ*, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *атъ* and *атъ*, whilst in *ыатъ* and *ыатъ* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *o*, this vowel is changed into *á*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. *не писатъ тебе вина*, *you ought not to drink wine*; *онъ пыжалъ верхомъ*, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Гада́ть, to guess, I. c. . . . .	гáдывать.
Думáть, to think, — . . . . .	дúмывать.
Дéлать, to make, — . . . . .	дéлывать.
Игра́ть, to play, — . . . . .	игры́вать.
Кутáть, to wrap, — . . . . .	ку́тывать.
Мотáть, to wind, — . . . . .	мáтывать.
Рабóтать, to work, — . . . . .	рабáтывать.
Щúпать, to sound, — . . . . .	щúпывать.
Зна́ть, to know, — . . . . .	зна́вать.
Ковáть, to forge, I. 2. . . . .	кóвывать.
Рисовáть, to draw, — . . . . .	рисóвывать.
Советовáть, to counsel, — . . . . .	советы́вать.
Воевáть, to war, — . . . . .	воёвывать.
Дневáть, to pass the day, — . . . . .	дневы́вать.
Ночевáть, to pass the night, — . . . . .	ночёвывать.
Гуля́ть, to take a walk, I. 3. . . . .	гúливать.
Равнáть, to equal, — . . . . .	ráвнивать.
Смéяться, to laugh, — . . . . .	смéяться.
Вéять, to blow, — . . . . .	вéвать.
Сéять, to sow, — . . . . .	сéвать.
Слабéть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	слабéвать.
Грeять, to warm, — . . . . .	грeвать.
Говéть, to keep fast, — . . . . .	гáливать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Бранить, to scold, II, 1. . . . .	брáнивать.
Палить, to fire, — . . . . .	пáливать.
Молить, to pray, — . . . . .	мáливать.
Спóрить, to contend, — . . . . .	спáривать,
Дарить, to give, — . . . . .	дáривать.
Дразнить, to provoke, — . . . . .	дráжнивать.
Болеть, to ache, — . . . . .	бáлывать.
Смотреть, to look, — . . . . .	смáтривать.
Гореть, to burn, — . . . . .	гаrать.
Велеть, to order, — . . . . .	велъвáть.
Зреть, to see, — . . . . .	зирáть.
Пойти, to give to drink, . . . . .	пáивать.
Клейть, to glue, — . . . . .	клéивать.
Бояться, to fear, — . . . . .	бáиваться.
Пороть, to rip, — . . . . .	пáрывать.
Молоть, to grind, — . . . . .	мáлывать.
Любить, to love, II. 2. . . . .	любливать.
Ловить, to catch, — . . . . .	лáвлывать.
Рубить, to hew, — . . . . .	рубáть.
Кормить, to nourish, — . . . . .	кармливать.
Топить, to heat, — . . . . .	тáпливать.
Терпеть, to suffer, — . . . . .	тéрпливать.
Кипеть, to boil, — . . . . .	кипáть.
Дремать, to slumber, — . . . . .	дрéмливать.
Сыпать, to strew, — . . . . .	сыпáть.
Хромать, to be lame, — . . . . .	хráмывать.
Лечить, to cure, II. 3. . . . .	лéчивать.
Служить, to serve, — . . . . .	слúживать.
Тушить, to put out, — . . . . .	тúшивать.
Морщить, to wrinkle, — . . . . .	марщивать.
Держать, to keep, — . . . . .	дéрживать.
Молчать, to be silent, — . . . . .	мáлчивать.
Дышать, to breathe, — . . . . .	дыхáть.
Гладить, to even, II. 4 . . . . .	глáживать.
Городить, to enclose, — . . . . .	горáживать.
Судить, to judge, — . . . . .	сúживать.
Грузить, to lade, — . . . . .	гру́живать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Сидеть, to sit, II. 4.	сиживать.
Вязать, to tie, —	вязывать.
Платить, to pay, II. 5.	плачивать.
Колотить, to knock, —	колачивать.
Молотить, to thrash, —	молачивать.
Плакать, to weep, —	плакивать.
Весить, to weigh, II. 6.	вешивать.
Просить, to ask, —	прáшивать.
Гасить, to extinguish, —	гáшивать.
Писать, to write, —	пи́сывать.
Плясать, to dance, —	плáсывать.
Пахать, to plough, —	пáхивать.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7.	гáшивать.
Мостить, to floor, —	ма́щивать.
Снастить, to rig, —	сна́щивать.
Искать, to seek, —	искивать.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1.	топа́ть.
Тянуть, to draw, —	тягивать.
Вянуть, to fade, —	вяда́ть.
Сыхнуть, to dry, —	сыхáть.
Пахнуть, to smell, —	пáхивать.
Гнуть, to bend, —	гиба́ть.
Мкнуть, to shut, —	мыка́ть.
Сосать, to suck, —	сáсывать.
Переть, to press, III. 2.	пира́ть.
Тереть, to rub, —	тира́ть.

61.—The *defective simple verbs* are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect aspect*, such are the following verbs:

Адеть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бедствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Иметь, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
to govern, I. 4.	Льстить, to flatter, II. 7.
to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Полдничать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радеть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1.
Роптать, to murmur, II. 7.	Уметь, to know, I. 4.
Рыдаться, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спешить, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотеть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Стараться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *иумъ*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*      2) *Iterative aspect.*      3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Ахать, to sigh, I. 1. . . .	ахивать. . . . .	ахнуть, III. 1.
Блистать, to shine, — . . . .	— . . . . .	блеснуть, —
Болтать, to shake, — . . . .	балтывать. . . . .	болтнуть, —
Глотать, to swallow, — . . . .	глатывать. . . . .	глонуть, —
Двигаться, to move, I. 1. and II. 4. . . . .	двигивать and двигаться. . . . .	двинуть, —

Дерзать, to dare, I. 1. . . . .

• 1) *Imperfect aspect.*      2) *Iterative aspect.*      3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Зевáть, to yawn, I. 1.	зевáвать . . . . .	зевнúть, III, 1.
Касáться, to touch, — .	— . . . . .	коснúться, —
Квáкать, to quack, — .	квáкивать . . . . .	квáкнуть, —
Кивáть, to give a nod, — .	— . . . . .	кивнúть, —
Кидáть, to cast, — .	кидывать . . . . .	кинуть, —
Лóпать, to burst, — .	лóпывать . . . . .	лóпнуть, —
Нюхáть, to smell, — .	ниюхивать . . . . .	ниюхнúть, —
Пóрхать, to flutter, — .	пáрхивать . . . . .	пóрхнуть, —
Прыгáть, to jump, — .	прыгивать . . . . .	прыгнуть, —
Прайдáть, to bound, — .	прайдывать . . . . .	прайнуть, —
Сверкáть, to flash, — .	свérкивать . . . . .	сверкнуть, —
Толкáть, to push, — .	тáлкивать . . . . .	толкнуть, —
Трóгать, to touch, — .	трóгивать . . . . .	трóнуть, —
Хárкать, to spit, — .	хáркивать . . . . .	хáркнуть, —
Хлóпать, to clap, — .	хлóпывать . . . . .	хлóпнуть, —
Совáть, to shove, I. 2.	сóбывать . . . . .	сунуть, —
Клевáть, to peck, — .	клéвывать . . . . .	клóнуть, —
Плевáть, to spit, — .	плéвывать . . . . .	плóнуть, —
Жевáть, to chew, — .	жéвывать . . . . .	жевнúть, —
Кáшлять, to cough, I. 3.	кáшливать . . . . .	кашлянúть, —
Нырять, to dive, — .	ныривать . . . . .	нырнúть, —
Стрélить, to shoot, — .	стрéливать . . . . .	стрélнуть, —
Швырять, to sling, — .	швыривать . . . . .	швырнúть, —
Рéять, to throw, — .	— . . . . .	ринуть, —
Скользíть, to slip, II. 1.	скáльзивать . . . . .	скользнúть, —
Шевелить, to stir, — .	шевéливать . . . . .	шевельнúть, —
Колóть, to sting, — .	кáльвать . . . . .	колоинúть, —
Давить, to press, II. 2.	дáвлывать . . . . .	давнúть, —
Рубить, to hew, — .	рубáть . . . . .	рубнúть, —
Гремéть, to thunder, — .	— . . . . .	граинуть, —
Храпéть, to snore, — .	храпáвать . . . . .	храпнúть, —
Трепáть, to brake, — .	трéпливать . . . . .	трепнúть, —
Щипáть, to pinch, — .	щíпывать . . . . .	щипнúть, —
Ворошíть, to rummage, II. 3.	вороáшивать . . . . .	ворохнúть, —
Плющíть, to flatten, — .	плюóшивать . . . . .	плюснúть, —
Визжáть, to squeak, — .	вíзгивать . . . . .	вíзгнуть, —
Дрожáть, to tremble, — .	дрáгивать . . . . .	дрогнúть, —

1) *imperfect aspect.*      2) *Iterative aspect.*      3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Кричáть, тó cry, II. 3.	крикáвать.	крикнуть, III. 1.
Пышáть, to burn, —	пыхáвать.	пыхнуть, —
Трещáть, to burst, —	трéскáвать.	трéснуть, —
Глядéть, to look, II. 4.	глáдывать.	гляну́ть, —
Брызгáть, to splash, —	брызгáвать.	брызну́ть, —
Лизáть, to lick, —	лизáвать.	лизну́ть, —
Мáзать, to anoint, —	мáзывать.	мазну́ть, —
Вертéть, to turn, II. 5.	вéртывать от вéрчивать.	верну́ть, —
Скакáть, to leap, —	скáкывать.	скокну́ть, —
Кликáть, to call, —	клика́вать.	кликнуть, —
Шептáть, to whisper, —	шéптыкáвать.	шепнуть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	—	трухнуть, —
Колыхáть, to swing, —	колыхáвать.	колыхнуть, —
Махáть, to wave, —	мáхивать.	махну́ть, —
Плескáть, to splash, II. 7.	плéскáвать.	плесну́ть, —
Прыскáть, to syringe, —	прыскáвать.	прыснуть, —
Свистáть, to whistle, —	свисты́вать.	свистнуть, —
Хлестáть, to lash, —	хлёстывать.	хлеснуть, —
Грести, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	гребáть.	гребнуть, —
Дуть, to blow, —	дува́ть.	дунуть, —
Жечь, to burn, —	жигáть.	жигнуть, —
Рвать, to tear, —	рыва́ть.	рвануть, —
Стричь, to shear, —	стригáть.	стригнуть, —
Трасти, to shake, —	тряса́ть.	тряхнуть, —

Some verbs, as **минуть**, **обмануть**, **помянуть**, **вынуть**, which are perfect aspects of **миновать**, *to pass*; **обманывать**, *to cheat*; **поминать**, *to mention*; **вынимать**, *to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *u* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double simple verbs* are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

1) *Definite imperfect aspect.*    2) *Indefinite  
imp. aspect.*    3) *Iterative aspect.*

Блудить, to ramble, II. 4. .	блуждáть, I. 1. .
Брести, to wander, <i>irr.</i> . . .	брóдить, II. 4. бráживать.
Бежать, to run, <i>irr.</i> . . .	бéгать, I. 1. . бéгивать and бéгáть.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1. .	валить, I. 3. . вáливать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i> . . .	возить, II. 4. вáживть.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i> . . .	водить, — . вáживать.
Видеть, to see, II. 4. . .	видáть, I. 1. . вíдывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i> . . .	гонять, I. 3. . гáнивать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i> . . .	ходить, II. 4. хáживать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5. . .	качать, I. 1. . кáчивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2. .	кривлять, I. 3. крýвливать.
Лететь, to fly, II. 5. . .	летáть, I. 1. . лéтывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2. .	ломáть, — . лáмывать.
Лзать, to climb, <i>irr.</i> . . .	лázить, II. 4. лвзáть and лáживать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i> . . .	носить, II. 6. нáшивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i> . . .	плáвать, I. 1. плýвать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i> . . .	ползать, — . ползáть and пáлзывать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1. .	ронять, I. 3. . рáнивать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3. .	слыхáть, I. 1. слýхивать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4. . .	сажáть, — . сáживать.
Таскать, to trail, II. 3. .	таскáть, — . тáсживать.
Взхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i> . . .	вздить, II. 4. вéживать and вéжáть.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блестать and блестéть, *to shine*; мéрить and мéртъть, *to measure*; сви-стать and свистéть, *to whistle*. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

**Prepositional verbs.** 64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning.

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспать, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; плакать, *to weep*, and выплакать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

*Simple figure.*

Двигнуть, to move, } perf. asp. of unity.  
Бросить, to throw, }  
двинуть, } imperfect aspect . . .  
бросить, }  
двигаться or движиваться, } iterative asp.  
бррасывать, . . . . .

*Prepositional figure.*

Двигнуть, to move in, } perf. asp.  
Набросить, to throw on, } of unity.  
двигать, } perf. asp. of duration.  
набрасывать, }  
двигаться or движиваться, } imperfect  
бррасывать, . . . . . asp

3. The acceptation of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ходить or идти, *to go*, and имать or ять, *to take*.

Входить, войти, to go in.  
Восходить, взойти, to go up.  
Выходить, выйти, to go out.  
Доходить, дойти, to come to.  
Заходить, зайти, to go behind.  
Исходить, изойти, to go out.  
Находить, найти, to go upon.

Нисходить, низойти, to go down.  
Обходить, обойти, to go round.  
Отходить, отойти, to go away.  
Переходить, перейти, to go over.  
Превосходить, превзойти, to surpass.

Пожоди́ть, to resemble.	Донима́ть, дона́ть, to get the remainder.
Пойти́, to go.	Занима́ть, заня́ть, to borrow.
Подходи́ть, подойти́, to go under.	Изнима́ть, изня́ть, to take out.
Предходи́ть, пройти́, to go before.	Нанима́ть, наня́ть, to hire.
Приходи́ть, прйти́, to come in.	Обнима́ть, обня́ть, to embrace.
Проходи́ть, пройти́, to go through.	Отнима́ть, отня́ть, to take away.
Происходи́ть, произойти́, to proceed.	Перенима́ть, переня́ть, to intercept. [stand.]
Расходи́ться, разойти́ся, to go asunder.	Понима́ть, поня́ть, to understand.
Сходи́ть, сойти́, to go down.	Пойма́ть, to catch.
Сниходи́ть, снизойти́, to descend.	Поднима́ть, подня́ть, to take up.
Уходи́ть, уйти́, to go away.	Предпринима́ть, предприня́ть, to undertake.
Внима́ть, вня́ть, to attend to.	Принима́ть, приня́ть, to accept.
Взима́ть, to levy.	Приподнима́ть, приподня́ть, to raise up.
Взять, to take.	Пронима́ть, проня́ть, to put through.
Воздыма́ть, to raise.	Разнима́ть, разня́ть, to take asunder.
Воспринима́ть, восприня́ть, to receive.	Снима́ть, снять́, to take off.
Вынима́ть, вынуть, to take out.	Унима́ть, унять́, to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: в (во), въ (въз, въз), вы, до, за, из (изо), на, над (надо), низ (низо), о or об (обо), от (ото), пере or пре, по, под (подо), при, про, раз (разо), с (со), у. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb *идти* (*sl. ити*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*ü*).

The prepositions *без* (безо), *пред* (предо), and also 'с (со) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptation of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: *безчестить*, to dishonour; *предвидѣть*, to foresee; *содѣйствовать*, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *противостоять*, *to resist*; *мимоидти*, *to come by*.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *разуметь*, *to understand*, from *разумъ*, *intelligence*; *помнить*, *to remember*, from *память*, *memory*; *съвеститься*, *to have a conscience*, from *съвестъ*, *conscience*. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

I. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the *imperfect* aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

Пожелать, to wish, I. 1.	Растерять, to lose, I. 3.
Покарать, to chastise, —	Возъиметь, to have, I. 4.
Отмечать, to imagine, —	Завладеть, to possess, —
Воспылать, to burst into flames, —	Суметь, to know, —
Нарыдаться, to wail, —	Оцениться, to whelp, II. 1.
Постараться, to endeavour, —	Остепениться, to grow sedate, —
Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	Возгордиться, to be proud of, II. 4.
Возопий (for <i>взопи́ть</i> ), to cry out, I. 3.	Пощадить, to spare, —.
	Затрепетать, to tremble, II. 7.
	Поблекнуть, to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. 6).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (стараться, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постараться, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (стараться, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарался, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *но*, the completion and simultaneousness; *всё*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. E. g. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сдѣлать, *to have made*; украдь, *to have stolen*; засмѣяться, *to have laughed*; покраснѣть, *to have blushed*; выходитъ, *исходитъ*, обходитъ, *to have gone all over*; прѣсть, *to have eaten all up*; передѣлать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *съ*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ*, *отперъ*, *прибыль*, *началь*, &c., from *умереть*, *to die*; *отпереть*, *to open*; *прибыть*, *to arrive*; *начать*, *to begin*.

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Угада́ть, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	уга́дывать, I. 1.
Обду́мать, to deliberate, — . . . . .	обду́мывать, —
Отдъ́лать, to finish, — . . . . .	отдъ́лывать, —
Зангрáть, to play, — . . . . .	зайгрывать, —
Оку́тать, to wrap about, — . . . . .	оку́тывать, —
Промота́ть, to squander, — . . . . .	прома́тывать, —
Смъшта́ть, to mingle, — . . . . .	смъши́вать, —
Узна́ть, to recognise, — . . . . .	узна́вáть, —
Прикова́ть, to chain to, I. 2. . . . .	прико́вывать, —
Обрисо́вать, to outline, — . . . . .	обрисо́вывать, —
Основа́ть, to found, — . . . . .	осно́вывать, —
Завоё́вать, to conquer, — . . . . .	завоё́вывать, —
Прогу́лить, to walk, I. 3. . . . .	прогу́ли́вать, —
Осмъя́ть, to laugh at, — . . . . .	осмъши́вать, —
Усéять, to sow, — . . . . .	усéвáть, —
Ослабе́ть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	ослабе́вáть, —
Договéть, to fast, — . . . . .	догáвливáть, —
Согрéть, to warm, — . . . . .	согрeвáть, —
Зажáрить, to roast, II. 1. . . . .	зажáривать, —
Усмотре́ть, to discern, — . . . . .	усмотри́вать, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Ь, to damage, II. 4 . . . .	попреждáть, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, — . . . .	побуждáть, —
Приблизить, to draw near, — . . . .	приближáть, —
Замéтить, to remark, II. 5. . . . .	замъчáть, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6. . . . .	погашáть, —
Обольстить, to seduce, II. 7. . . . .	обольщáть, —
Отомстить, to avenge, — . . . . .	отмщáть, —
Посвятить, to hallow, — . . . . .	посвящáть, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Разбрани́ть, to scold, II. 1. разбрани́вать, I. 1. & Возбранíть, to forbid, I. 1. . . . .	возбранíть, I. 3.
Запалить, to kindle, — . . . . . запалывать, —, & Воспалить, to inflame, — . . . . . воспалить, —	
Переполнить, to fill, — . . . . . переполнивать, —, & Исполнить, to fulfil, — . . . . . исполнить, —	
Перестройти, to rebuild, — . . . . . перестройвать, —, & Устроить, to arrange, — . . . . . устроить, —	
Завострить, to sharpen, — . . . . . завастривать, —, & Постройти, to excite, — . . . . . поощрять —	
Изловить, to catch, II. 2. изловывать, —, & Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. уловить, —	
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. подмачивать, —, & Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . . . . омочать, I. 1.	
Выучить, to teach, — . . . . . выучивать, —, & Научить, to initiate, — . . . . . научать, —	
Загородить, to fence, II. 4. загораживать, —, & Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . . . . ограждать, —	
Пересудить, to rejudge, — . . . . . пересуживать, —, & Осудить, to condemn, — . . . . . осуждать, —	
Осадить, to plant, — . . . . . осаживать, —, & Осадить, to besiege, — . . . . . осаждать, —	
Вынередить, to outgo, — . . . . . вынередывать, —, & Предупредить, to prevent, — . . . . . предупреждать, —	
Вытвердинуть, to rehearse, — . . . . . вытвердживать, —, & Утвердить, to affirm, — . . . . . утверждать, —	
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. помутчивать, —, & Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . . . . возмущать, —	
Засвятить, to light, — . . . . . засвичивать, —, & Просвятить, to enlighten, — . . . . . просвещать, —	
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. закрашивать, —, & Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . . . . украшать, —	
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. загащиваться, —, & Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . . . . угощать, —	

d) The inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e.g.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Замёрznуть, to freeze, III. 1. . . . .	замерзать, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, — . . . . .	потухать, —
Погибнуть, to perish, — . . . . .	погибать, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, — . . . . .	окисать, —
Утихнуть, to abate, — . . . . .	утихать, —
Погаснуть, to go out, — . . . . .	погасать, —
Озябнуть, to starve, — . . . . .	озябать, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, — . . . . .	замокать, —
Изсохнуть, to dry up, — . . . . .	изсыхать, —
Издохнуть, to die, — . . . . .	издыхать, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, — . . . . .	привыкать, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, — . . . . .	исчезать, —

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Оправдáть, to justify, I. 1. . . . .	опрáждывать, I. 1.
Обнарóдовать, to publish, I. 2. . . . .	обнарóдывать, —
Затéять, to devise, I. 3. . . . .	затéвать, —
Одолéть, to surmount, I. 4. . . . .	одолéвать, —
Укоренийтъ, to root, II. 1. . . . .	укоренийтъ, I. 3.
Водворйтъ, to settle, — . . . . .	водворйтъ, —
Разорйтъ, to ruin, — . . . . .	разорйтъ, —
Удáрить, to strike, — . . . . .	ударйтъ, —
Повторйтъ, to repeat, — . . . . .	повторйтъ, —
Истребйтъ, to destroy, II. 2. . . . .	истреблйтъ, —
Одушевйтъ, to animate, — . . . . .	одушевлйтъ, —
Усыновйтъ, to adopt; — . . . . .	усыновлйтъ, —
Надоумйтъ, to instruct, — . . . . .	надоумливтъ, I. 1.
Приложйтъ, to add, II. 3. . . . .	прилагтъ, —
Уничтожйтъ, to humble, — . . . . .	уничижтъ, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Уничтожить, to annul, II. 3. . . . .	уничтожать, I. 1.
Вооружить, to arm, — . . . . .	вооружать, —
Внушить, to suggest, — . . . . .	внушать, —
Вручить, to hand, — . . . . .	вручать, —
Истощить, to exhaust, — . . . . .	истощать, —
Соорудить, to erect, II. 4. . . . .	сооружать, —
Победить, to vanquish, — . . . . .	побеждать, —
Усладить, to delight, — . . . . .	услаждать, —
Пронзить, to pierce, — . . . . .	пронзать, —
Обидеть, to offend, — . . . . .	обижать, —
Встретить, to meet, II. 5. . . . .	встрѣчать, —
Отвѣтить, to answer, — . . . . .	отвѣчать, —
Воскресить, to revive, II. 6. . . . .	воскрешать, —
Помѣстить, to place, II. 7. . . . .	помѣщать, —
Подустить, to instigate, — . . . . .	подушать, —
Посвѣтить, to visit, — . . . . .	посвѣщать, —
Укротить, to appease, — . . . . .	укрощать, —
Насытить, to satiate, — . . . . .	насыщать, —
Зашитить, to protect, — . . . . .	защищать, —
Достигнуть, to reach, III. 1. . . . .	достигать, —
Воскрѣснуть, to resuscitate, — . . . . .	воскресать, —
Окунуть, to dip, — . . . . .	окунывать, —
Замкнуть, to lock, — . . . . .	замыкать, —
Ушибить, to bruise, — . . . . .	ушибать, —
Простерть, to extend, III. 2. . . . .	простирать, —
Обуть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	обувать, —
Попрѣть, to trample, — . . . . .	попирать, —
Распѣть, to crucify, — . . . . .	распинать, —
Начать, to begin, — . . . . .	начинать, —
Отнять, to take out, — . . . . .	отнимать, —
Отверзти, to open, — . . . . .	отверзать, —
Обрѣсті, to find out, — . . . . .	обрѣтать, —
Счѣсть, to count, — . . . . .	считать, —
Разсвѣсті, to grow light, — . . . . .	разсвѣтать, —
Запрячь, to put to, — . . . . .	запрягать, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

*f)* The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) *Perfect aspect.*

2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of <i>замѣня́ть</i> ).	замѣнить, to compensate, I. 3.
Застрѣлить, — (instead of <i>застрѣля́ть</i> ).	застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.
Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of <i>вскака́ть</i> ) . . .	вскакивать, to leap in, —
Укусить, II. 6 (instead of <i>укуса́ть</i> ) . . .	укусывать, to bite, —
Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of <i>возвѣща́ть</i> ).	возвѣщать, to announce, —
Поглотить, — (instead of <i>поглоща́ть</i> ) . . .	поглощать, to swallow up, —

*g)* Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

REGULAR FORMATION

IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) <i>Perfect aspect</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Презирѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . .	презирѣть, I. 1. . . .	Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. . . .	обозрѣвать, I. 1.
Сыскать, to find, II. 7. . . . .	сыскывать, —	Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. . . .	снискывать, —
Обудзѣть, to curb, I. 1. . . . .	обудзѣвать, —	Взглѣдѣть, to bridle, I. 1. . . . .	взглѣдывать, —
Создаѣть, to build, <i>irr.</i> (сози́жду) созидаѣть, —		Создаѣть (создѣмъ), . . . . .	создаваѣть (создаѣмъ).
Нагрѣстї, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	нагрѣбать, —	Погребѣстї, to bury, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	погребаѣть, I. 1.
Позволиѣть, to permit, II. 1. . . . .	позволиѣть, I. 3. . . . .	Увѣльти, to discharge, II. 1. . . . .	увольнѣть, I. 3. . . . .
Осмѣяѣть, to deride, I. 3. . . . .	осмѣиваться, I. 1. . . . .	Насмѣяѣться, to laugh at, I. 3. . . . .	насмѣхаться, I. 1. . . . .
Обвязаѣть, to bind, II. 4. . . . .	обвязывать, —	Обязаѣть, to oblige, II. 4. . . . .	обязывать, —
Сравнїть, to even, I. 3. . . . .	срѣвнївать, —	Сравнїть, to compare, II. 1. . . . .	срѣвнївать, —
Принїть, to take, <i>irr.</i> (принїмѣ) принимаѣть, —		Вынїть, to take out, III. 1. . . . .	вынимать, —
Прибажаѣть, to run up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	прибажаѣть, —	Прибажнѣть, to resort, III. 1. . . . .	прибажнѣть, —

*h)* Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожаѣть, to adore, I. 1.

Ожидаѣть, to wait, I. 1.

Обладаѣть, to dominate, —

Обитѣть, to habit, —

Обѣщаѣть, to promise, —

Опасаѣться, to fear, —

Завѣщаѣть, to bequeath, —

Обуревѣть, to agitate, —

Увѣщаѣть, to exhort, —

Подражаѣть, to imitate, —

Охуждаѣть, to criticize, —

Подобаѣть, to be necessary, —

Осияаѣть, to touch, —

Порицаѣть, to blame, —

Подозрева́ть, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербля́ться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнева́ться, to doubt, —	Сожа́дить, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерца́ть, to contemplate, —	Смы́слить, to understand, II. 1.
Изоби́ловать, to abound, I. 2.	Состо́ять, to consist, —
Наследо́вать, to inherit, —	Упрáмиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повинова́ться, to obey, —	Содержáть, to maintain, II. 3.
Привéтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидéть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обоня́ть, to scent, I. 3.	Походи́ть, to resemble, —
Упражнить, to occupy, —	Зави́сеть, to depend, II. 6.

2) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нуть*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) *Perfect aspect.*      2) *Imperfect aspect.*      3) *Iterative asp.*

Благослови́ть, to bless, II. 2.	благословля́ть, I. 3.	—
Бро́сить, to throw, II. 6.	брасо́ть, I. 1.	брáсывать.
Бы́ть, to be, <i>irr.</i>	бы́вáть, —	бы́вывать.
Велéть, to order, II. 1.	(велéть)	велéвáть.
Вороти́ть, to turn, II. 5.	воро́тить, I. 1.	ворáчивáть.
Да́ть, to give, <i>irr.</i>	да́вать, — (даю)	—
Двéть, to put, <i>irr.</i>	двáтить, —	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1.	(женить)	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1.	(казнить)	—
Кончить, to end, II. 3.	кончáть, —	ка́нчивáть.
Купи́ть, to buy, II. 2.	(покупáть).	—
Лечи́ть, to lie, <i>irr.</i>	ложи́ться, II. 3.	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3.	лиши́ть, I. 1.	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	па́дáть, —	(падáть).
Плънить, to captivate, II. 1.	плънить, I. 3.	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7.	прошáтъ, I. 1.	—
Пусти́ть, to let go, —	пускáть and пущáть,	—
Рáнить, to hurt, II. 1.	(рáнить)	—
Роди́ть, to beget, II. 4.	рожáть and рождáть,	—

1) *Perfect aspect.*      2) *Imperfect aspect.*      3) *Iterative asp.*

Ру́шить, to break down, II. 3. (ру́шить)	... . . . .	ру́шивать.
Ры́шить, to decide, II. 3. . .	ры́шать, —	—
Свободы́ть, to deliver, II. 4. .	свобожда́ть, —	—
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> . . .	станови́ться, II. 2. . . . .	станови́ваться.
{ to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> . . .	става́ть, I. I. (стаю́) . . .	—
Ступы́ть, to go, II. 2. . . . .	ступа́ть, —	—
Сесть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	сади́ться, II. 4. . . . .	—
Хваты́ть, to seize, II. 5. . . .	хвата́ть, I. I. . . . .	хва́чивать.
Явы́ть, to show, II. 2. . . . .	явлы́ть, I. 3. . . . .	—
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	има́ть, I. I. and II. 2 ( <i>имаю</i> & <i>ёмъ</i> ).	—

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *оватъ*, e. g. *аттаковатъ*, to *attack*; *конфисковатъ*, to *confiscate*, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *вельть*, *женить*, *казнить*, *ранить* and *ру́шить*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *раню* and *ру́шу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купить*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупатъ*. The verbs *дароватъ*, to *give*; *миноватъ*, to *pass*, and *образоватъ*, to *form*, as well as the inflections *дароваль*, *миноваль* and *образоваль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарю*, *миную* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновать* forms its future with *мину́*, *минешь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *мину́ль* and *миноваль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *брóсить*, *дать*, *деть*, *пасть*, *пустить*, *ступить*, *хватить*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословить*, *женить*, *казнить*, *лишить*, *ранить* and *плнить*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Забыть, to forget, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	забывáть, I. 1.
Повелéть, to order, II. 1. . . . .	повелъвáть, —
Раздáть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	раздавáть, —
Одѣть, to dress, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	одъвáть, —
Раскушить, to buy up, II. 2. . . . .	раскупáть, —
Залéчь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	залегáть, —
Упáсть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	упадáть, —
Распростýться, to take leave, II. 7. . . . .	распрошáться, —
Пропустить, to let pass, — . . . . .	пропускáть, —
Уродíть, to produce, II. 4. . . . .	урожáть, —
Разрушить, to destroy, II. 6. . . . .	разрушáть, —
Разрýшить, to decide, — . . . . .	разрýшáть, —
Освободíть, to free, II. 4. . . . .	освобождáть, —
Достáть, to procure, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	доставáть, —
Остановить, to stop, II. 2. . . . .	останáвливáть, —
Выступить, to go out, II. 2. . . . .	выступáть, —
Засéсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	засéдáть, —
Изъявить, to indicate, II. 2. . . . .	изъявля́ть, I. 3.

The verbs *брóсить*, *воротить*, *кбнчить* and *хеатить* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ять*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at one time and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить andхватить; e. g.:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

a) *of duration.* b) *of unity.*

Выболтать, I. 1. выболтнуть, III. 1. выболтывать, to divulge, I. 1.  
 Накидать, — . накинуть, — . . . накидывать, to heap up, —  
 Вспорхать, — . вспорхнуть, — . . . вспархивать, to flutter, —  
 Выпрыгать, — . выпрыгнуть, — . . . выпрыгивать, to skip out, —  
 Столкнуть, — . столкнуть, — . . . столкивать, to push down, —  
 Захлопнуть, — . захлопнуть, — . . . захлопывать, to shut with a clap, —  
 Забрызгать, — . забрызгнуть, — . . . забрызгивать, to besprinkle, —  
 Всовать, I. 2. всунуть, — . . . всовывать, to shove in, —  
 Выклювать, — . выклюнуть, — . . . выклёвывать, to peck out, —  
 Придавить, II. 2. придавнуть, — . . . придавливать, to press to, —  
 Окликнуть, II. 5. окликнуть, — . . . окликать, to call to, —  
 Сдувать, *irr.* . . . сдуть, — . . . сдувать, to blow off, —  
 Поджечь, — . поджигнуть, — . . . поджигать, to fire, —  
 Вывалить, I. 3. вывалить, II. 1. . . вываливать, to throw out, —  
 Прокатить, I. 1. прокатить, II. 5. . . прокатывать, to roll through, —  
 Выломать, — . выломить, II. 2. . . выломывать, to break out, —  
 Сронить, I. 3. . . сронить, II. 1. . . сранивать, to throw down, —  
 Вытащить, I. 1. вытащить, II. 3. . . вытащивать, to pull out, —  
 Забросить, — . забросить, II. 6. . . забрасывать, to throw beyond, —  
 Сворачать, — . своротить, II. 5. . . сворачивать, to avert, —  
 Окончить, — . окончить, II. 3. . . оканчивать, to terminate, —  
 Захватить, — . захватить, II. 5. . . захватывать, to catch, —

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*

a) *of duration.* b) *of unity.*

Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1. . . поговорить . . . сказать, II. 4.  
 Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2. . . изловить . . . поймать, I. 1.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*a) *of duration.* b) *of unity.*

Быть, to beat, *irr.* . . . . . побить . . . ударить, II. 1.  
 Брать, to take, *irr.* . . . . . побрать, . . . взять, *irr.* (возьмь).  
 Класть, to lay, *irr.* . . . . . покласть . . . положить, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.

a) *Perfect asp.* b) *Imperfect asp.* a) *Perfect asp.* b) *Imperfect asp.*  
 Выбрести, *irr.* выбродить, to go out, II. 4. & Выбродить, II. 4. выброживать, to ferment, I. 1.  
 Выбражать, — выбргать, to flee, I. 1. & Выбрзгать, I. 1. выбржгивать, to precede, —  
 Завезти, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4. & Завозить, II. 4. заваживать, to transport, —  
 Провести, — проводить, to conduct, —, & Проводить, —. провожать, to accompany, —  
 Загнагь, — . загонять, to drive, I. 3. & Загонять, I. 3. заганывать, to harass, —  
 Выйти, — . выходить, to go out, II. 4. & Выходить, II. 4. выхаживать, to obtain, —  
 Влететь, II. 5. влетать, to fly in, I. 1. & Перелететь, I. 1. передётывать, to fly by, —  
 Донести, *irr.* доносить, to denounce, II. 6. & Доносить, II. 6. донаживать, to wear out, —  
 Вползти, — вползать, to creep in, I. 1. & Отползть, I. 1. отпажывать, to go away, —  
 Вызахть, — . выважать, to go out, I. 1. & Выезжать, II. 4. выважживать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

## EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular verbs. I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-

— Я дѣлать добро, сколько я желать. Ты желать

Present.

struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences, учиться. Онь думать что онъ знать весь наука,

and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in и хвастать (*instr.*) свой успехъ. Я дерзать не вѣрить (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours  
 вашъ слόво, хотя ты говорить пра́вда. Мой соса́дъ  
 only live on bread, and trust in Providence.  
 одинъ питаться (instr.) хлебъ, и упова́ть на (acc.) Провидéніе.  
 You trade in cloth, and you ask much.  
 Ты торго́вать (instr.) сукно, и ты тре́бовать (gen.) мно́гое.  
 The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies  
 Гóлубъ ворковáть; гóрлица стонáть; собáка лáять; щенóкъ  
 yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;  
 брехáть; лягúшка квáкать; вóронъ гráкать; вóрона кárкать;  
 lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat  
 левъ ры́кать; олéнь токовáть; кúрица кудáхтать; кóшка  
 mews; oxen bellow; the bee\* hums; the serpent hisses;  
 мяука́ть; быкъ мы́чать; пчелá жужжáть; змéй шинéть;  
 eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs  
 орёль трубить; соловéй щебетáть; овцá и ягнёночкъ  
 bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the  
 блеять; свинýй хрóкать; лисица визжáть; осёль ревéть;  
 turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;  
 калкунъ клохтáть; перепёлка вавáкать; пътухъ кукуре́кáть;  
 the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;  
 сорóка скрекотáть; попугáй болтáть. Громъ гремéть;  
 water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire  
 водá кипéть; дверь скрипéть; ручéй жужжáть; огóнь  
 crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees  
 треци́ть; звéздá сверкáть; сóлнце свéтить; пчелá  
 swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind  
 рóиться; алмáзъ блестéть; сухóй листъ хрустéть; вéтеръ  
 whistles; the snow melts. The sun illuminates the earth with  
 свистáть; снегъ таять. Солнце озарять землí (instr.)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns  
свой лучь, грѣть и живѣть онъ. Земля обращаться  
round the sun. You grieve in vain.  
вокругъ (gen.) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

*Preterit.* I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when  
Я гулять вчера по (dat.) берегъ рѣкѣ, когда  
the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,  
солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть подъ (instr.) дѣрево,  
which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday we worked,  
который качаться (instr.) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,  
read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished  
читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мереть  
through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.  
отъ (gen.) стужа. Онъ мать умереть давнѣ.

The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This  
Непріятель запереть онъ въ (prep.) крѣпость. Этотъ  
man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My  
человѣкъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ жена оглохнуть. Мой  
trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.  
дѣрево, высохнуть, и мой цвѣть завѣнуть.

*Future.* Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities  
Москвѣ красоваться долго во (prep.) глава городъ  
of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire  
рѣский. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство  
of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly  
Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и пріобрѣтать всегда  
more force and glory. A great monarch will never  
бѣлье (gen.) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда  
die.  
умереть.

*Imperative.* Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.  
Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упраѣмиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,  
 Не терять надёжда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,  
 and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and  
 и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и  
 do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and  
 не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и  
 do not dispute about trifles.  
 не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular verbs.  
 Соловей петь; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.  
 Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.  
 Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not understand  
 Ты братъ многа на (acc.) себя, и я не браятся  
 take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не  
 за (acc.) этотъ дѣло. Зачемъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ  
 lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.  
 жить въ (prep.) Москвѣ, и слыть (instr.) богатый человѣкъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax  
 Пастухъ стричь овцѣ; крестьянинъ прядь ленъ  
 and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish  
 и ткать холстъ. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть  
 to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could  
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь многа  
 not part with me. The enemies have burnt several  
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь многа  
 towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The  
 городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщеніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send  
 Пастухъ пасті овцѣ на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать  
 for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This  
 за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) дѣнги.. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its  
городъ цвѣстї, и онъ цвѣстї дѣлго (instr.)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what

сила и богатство. Я дать ты книга, и ты что

wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give  
дать я? Ты мочь не говорить: что онъ дать

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,

я за (acc.) ётотъ? Не брать на (acc.) себѧ (gen..) тотъ (gen.)

what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not  
что ты мочь не исполнить. Дитя, жить жирно, не

swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.

Клясться, не никогдѣ лгать, и вестї себѧ хорошенько.

Definite and Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes  
indefinite imperfect Звѣрь ходить и бѣгать, птица и муха летать, рыба  
aspect. swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming  
плавать, и червь ползать. Посмотрѣть, солдатъ идти

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this  
сюда; за (instr.) онъ бѣжать собака. Видѣть, какъ ётотъ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner  
ласточка лететь быстро; онъ летать всегда такъ. Сей морякъ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming  
долго плывть по (dat.) Чёрный Море. Что плыть

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried  
тамъ на (prep.) водѣ? Женѣ Славянинъ носить

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in  
водѣ и таскать дровѣ. Что ты нести въ (prep.)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this  
ётотъ мешокъ? Смотрѣть, какой вязанка дровѣ этотъ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not  
человѣкъ тащить. Видѣть тогдѣ (gen..) что не

seen for a long time.

видѣть дотолѣ.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.  
 Непріятель ря́ться въ (acc.) горо́дъ и кида́ться на (acc.)  
 booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a коры́сть. Засверка́ть молни́я. Сверка́ть молни́я, греметь violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church сильный громъ, земля дрожа́ть, церковь was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore. затряса́ться. Мой братъ ле́чь и захрапе́ться.  
 He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that Храпе́сть громко и просыпа́ться. Мочь я наде́яться, что my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun мой лира тро́гать еще вашъ хладный се́рдце? Солнце began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment заблиста́ть, но не надолго, блестеть and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all и скрыва́ться. Я выбрасы́вать за (acc.) окно весь the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out . соръ; въ (prep.) соръ я выбрасы́вать also a paper of importance.  
 и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.  
 (gen.) Прóшлый годъ я ходи́ть въ (acc.) горо́дъ. Сократъ was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited говори́ть. Неме́цъ изда́вна жи́ть Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I въ (prep.) Новгородъ. Жи́ть въ (prep.) Москвá, я often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth ъзди́ть въ (acc.) Лáвра Троицкий. Въ (acc.) молодо́й лéто I often lived in the country.  
 я жи́ть въ (prep.) деревни.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Subjunctive.  
 Если бы камень мочь говори́ть, онъ научи́ть бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (gen.) острожность. Если бъ кто нибудь войти къ (dat.) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (acc.) ютоть минута, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (prep.) отчайніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стонаніе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I мало (gen.) предметъ въ (prep.) свѣть, на (acc.) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (gen.) вниманіе. Быть (gen.) не сѣрдце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не изливаться бы въ (prep.) слеза.

The different tenses and aspects. This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain пенсія. He всякий выслуживать it with such distinction. He was in many онъ съ (instr.) такой отличіе. Онъ быть въ (prep.) много battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his генераженіе, и отличаться везде (instr.) блеста- markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly тельный храбрость. Онъ отличаться особенно at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted при (prep.) взятие батарея непріятельской. Онъ взбираться first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and пе́рвый на (acc.) брустверь, убиватъ непріятельской солдатъ, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a взять пушка. За (acc.) это онъ награждаться (instr.) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other орденъ. Потомъ онъ награждаться и (instr.) другой marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, отличіе. Теперь онъ отправляться въ (acc.) родина,

will establish himself with his family, and will relate  
 поселиться въ (prep.) свой семѣй, и разскѣзывать о (prep.)  
 his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and  
 свой похѣдъ, какъ ходїть на (acc.) Тўрокъ и  
 the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,  
 Французъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпѣть голодъ,  
 suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the  
 страдать отъ (gen.) раны, и утѣшаться (instr.)  
 thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and  
 мысль, что онъ служить (dat.) свой Государь (instr.) сѣрдце и  
 soul. Trust in me.  
 душа. Уповать на (acc.) я.

THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (причастія) have, as a part Division of  
the parti-  
ciples. of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*, and, as adjectives, that they may agree with their substantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with the pronoun *ся*, pronominal) and *passive*. They have the same number of aspects as the verbs whence they are derived, but they have only two tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the pronominal) participles are formed as follows: Active and  
neuter par-  
ticiples.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third person plural of the present indicative by changing the termination *тъ* into *ющій* (neut. *ющіе*, fem. *ющія*), and this without any exception; e. g. *дѣлающій*,

*making*; *любящий*, *loving*; *кричаший*, *crying*; *несущий*, *bearing* (from *дѣлаютъ*, *любятъ*, *кричатъ*, *несутъ*).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the *preterit* indicative, by changing *лъ* into *ши*, and *з* (in such verbs as have not *лъ* in the *preterit*) into *ши* (neut. *шее*, fem. *шая*); e. g. *дѣлавшій*, *having made*; *носившій*, *having borne*; *потухшій*, *being extinguished*; *тѣршій*, *having rubbed* (from *дѣлалъ*, *носилъ*, *потухъ*, *тѣръ*). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *ду* and *ту*, which, though forming their *preterit* in *лъ*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *ши*; these are: *блѣдшій*, *having kept*; *вѣдшій*, *having lead*; *падшій* (and *павшій*), *having fallen*; *прѣдшій*, *having spun*; *плѣтшій*, *having plaited*; *мѣтшій*, *having swept*; *обрѣтшій*, *having found*; *цвѣтшій*, *having flowered* (from *блѣду*, *вѣду*, *паду*, *прѣду*, *плѣту*, *мѣту*, *обрѣту* and *цвѣту*), and also *увѣдшій*, *being faded*; *шѣдшій*, *having gone*; *чѣтшій*, *having counted* (from *увѣдну*, *иду* and *чту*).

**Passive participles.** 68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a)* in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емъ*, *имъ* or *омъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b)* in the *preterit*, in *иный* or *тый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *инъ* or *тыъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *мѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемъ* and *любимъ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движесемый* and *борёмы*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ёмъ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовёмъ*, *трясёмъ*, *берегисёмъ*, *печёмъ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *искомый*, *being sought* (from *сосёмъ* and *ищемъ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *оъ* of the terminations *ала*, *яла* and *ъла*, into *иный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *ло* and *з* of the terminations *олъ*, *кулъ* and *зъ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнныи*, *seen*; *паленныи*, *burnt*; *явленныи*, *shown*; *винчённыи*, *screwed*; *колотыи*, *pricked*; *двинутыи*, *moved*; *тёртыи*, *rubbed* (from *дѣлалъ*, *разсѣялъ*, *видѣлъ*, *палілъ*, *явлілъ*, *винтилъ*, *кололъ*, *двинулъ*, *тѣрзъ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter-

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

**Passive verbs** 70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. *сынъ (есмъ)* *любимъ* *своймъ* *отцемъ*, *the son is loved by his father*; *ученикъ былъ награждёнъ за прилежаніе*, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

	1) Imperfect asp.	2) Perfect asp.
1. Present: . . .	я (есмъ) награждаемъ.	я (есмъ) награждёнъ.
2. Preterit: . . .	я былъ награждаемъ.	я былъ награждёнъ.
3. Future: . . .	я бўду награждаемъ.	я бўду награждёнъ.

#### EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

**Active and neuter participles.** The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child Человѣкъ любить прѣда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The купающѧся; собака бросающѧся на (acc.) прохожій. tradesman who received the goods from London, Купѣцъ, получать товѣръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received продавающѧся онъ выгодно. Купѣцъ получить the goods from London, has sold them advantageously. товѣръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) облегчение. Заже́чь the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window све́чка потухнуть, и вытереть стекло which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his замёрзнути. Сла́ва герой спаси́ свой country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking оте́чество. Рыка́ть левъ, мыча́ть быкъ, лая́ть dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their соба́ка, пѣть пѣту́хъ, ворково́вать голубь, выражáть свой feelings and wants. чу́вство и же́лание.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. Passive Móре, волнова́ть ве́тром, устраша́ть плове́цъ. *participles.* The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his Да́чъ, люби́ть оте́цъ, иска́ть заслужи́вать онъ love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed любо́вь. Должно помо́гать (*dat.*) несча́стный, гнать by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk, судьба́ и преслѣдовать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ снять моло́ко, and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the и вотъ терéть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заряди́ть ружьё. На (*prep.*) market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little рынокъ продава́ться бить гусь, смоли́ть верёвка, отко́рмить sucking pigs, and shorn sheep. поросёнокъ и стричь овца.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns Passive Russia обитáть (*instr.*) мно́го народа. Добры́й госу́дáрь *verbs.* are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours. люби́ть свой поддани́й и уважа́ть сосéдъ.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the Тата́рии. побе́дить и разбить на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with  
поме Куліковъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (instr.)  
success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This  
успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголь опрягать. Сей  
great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow  
великій полково́децъ чтить въ (prep.) пото́мство. Москвá  
has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun  
разорить и сжечь врагъ. Эта́ ружьё  
is charged. This book is well bound.  
зарядить. Эта́ книга прекрасно переплета́ть.

#### THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of the adverbs. 71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія ка́чества), e. g. *такъ*, *thus*; *иначе*, *otherwise*; *хорошо*, *well*; *худо*, *badly*; *нарочно*, *intentionally*; *скоро*, *quickly*; *напрасно*, *in vain*; *наугадъ*, *at random*; *заодно*, *by agreement*; *по-своему*, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (врѣмени), e. g. *вчера*, *yesterday*; *сего́дня*, *to-day*; *завтра*, *to-morrow*; *утромъ*, *in the morning*; *вѣчеромъ*, *in the evening*; *нынѣ*, *now*; *тепѣрь*, *at present*; *тогда*, *then*; *послѣ*, *afterwards*; *прѣжде*, *before*; *иногда*, *sometimes*; *тотчасъ*, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): a) such as indicate a place without motion: *здесь*, *here*; *тамъ*, *there*; *нигдѣ*, *nowhere*; *дома*, *at home*; *вездѣ*, *everywhere*; b) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда*, *hither*; *туда*, *thither*; *никуда*, *nowhere*; *домой*, *home*; *всюду*, *everywhere*; c) such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. *отсюда*, *from here*; *оттуда*, *from there*; *извне*, *from without*; *снаружи*, *from the exterior*; *отсюду*, *from all sides*, &c.

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. *во-первыхъ*, *firstly*; *во-вторыхъ*, *secondly*; *потомъ*, *subsequently*, &c. •

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (количества); e. g. *довольно*, *enough*; *мало*, *little*; *много*, *much*; *несколько*, *some*, &c.

6. *Implicit* (замынительный) adverbs, as: *да*, *yes*; *нѣть*, *no*; *моль*, *de*, *says he*, &c.

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительный) adverbs; e. g. *когда*, *when?* *доколь*, *how long?* *гдѣ*, *where* (without motion)? *куда*, *where* (with motion)? *откуда*, *whence?* *сколько*, *how much?* *зачемъ*, *why?* &c.

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. *кругомъ*, *in a circle*; *верхомъ*, *on horseback*; *даромъ*, *gratis*; *на показъ*, *for show*; *въ торопъхъ*, *in haste*, &c. Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: *окрасить бѣлѣ*, *to dye white, blue*; *поступать хорошо*, *to conduct himself well*. The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *но*, as: *по-человѣчески*, *as a man*; *по-рѣсски*, *in Russian*;

Formation  
of the ad-  
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звери́ному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of comparison. 73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. умно́, *wisely*, and умне́, *more wisely*; хорошо́, *well*, and лу́чше, *better*; покорко́, *humbly*, and всепокор-найше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́лье, *more*; ме́нье, *less*; до́лье, *longer*; да́лье, *further*; то́нье, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. синевáто, *bluish*; малéнько, *a little*; нёмнóжко, *not much*; похúже, *a little worse*; преу́мно́, *very wisely*.

Gerunds. 74.—The *gerunds* (дѣярчáстiя) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: a) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣля and дѣлаючи, *in doing*; дышá and дышучи, *in breathing*; несá and несучи, *in bearing*; b) in the *preterit*, вз and вши; e. g. дѣлавъ and дѣлавши, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter я in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. умéрши, *being dead*; шотúхши, *being*

*extinguished.* The same is the case with the pro-nominal verbs; e. g. *учившись*, *after having learned*; *возвратившись*, *having returned*.

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *ши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *ш* are more usual in the written tongue.

#### EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? *Adverbs.*

Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здесь. Где ваш брат?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening?  
Он не быть дома. Куда онъ поехатъ вчера вчера?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I  
Ты судить умно, а твой братъ . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian  
ходитьшибко, а ты . Ты говорить по-русски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow  
чисто, а ваш сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still  
я поехатъ очень далеко, а черезъ (acc.) годъ еще

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg  
Ты петь хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.

ты убедительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гулять на (prep.) берегъ рѣка, я наслаждаться  
the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate,  
(instr.) прохлада вчера. Жалѣть о (prep.) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish  
стараться помочь онъ. Я учить ты, желать

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress  
 ты (gen.) **добрó, и надеяться, что ты успевать**  
 in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do  
 въ (prep.) **наука.** **Не умѣть дѣлать** (gen.)  
 a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,  
 что **нибѣдь, просить** (gen.) **совѣтъ, не краснѣть.** **Дѣлать** добрó,  
 without fearing any man. One must not eat when  
 не **бояться** (gen.) **никтó.** **Должно не есть**  
 lying down. In serving our country, and dying for  
 лежаТЬ. **Служить** (dat.) **отѣчество, и умирать** за (acc.)  
 it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and  
 онъ, я **исполнить** свой долгъ. **Получить** вашъ письмо, и  
 having learned what you want, I have answered imme-  
 узнатъ (gen.) **что ты жѣлать, я отвѣтать** немѣ-  
 diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having  
 дленно. **Отобѣдать, оставаться** дома. **Напи-**  
 written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and  
 сать **письмо, положить** въ (acc.) **кувѣртъ, и**  
 sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned  
 запечатать, отдаваТЬ онъ на (acc.) почтá. **Прійті**  
 home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired  
 домой, я сѣТЬ писаТЬ. **Женитъся, онъ поѣхать**  
 to the country. Having remained an hour with him,  
 въ (acc.) **дерѣвня.** **Просидѣть** (acc.) **часъ у** (gen.) **онъ,**  
 I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,  
 я **пойти** домой; **раздѣваться** и **лечь,**  
 I fell asleep immediately.  
 я **уснѣть** скрѣо.

## THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предло́ги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-зá, изъ-пóдъ); the following is a general list of them:

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up. <i>sus-</i> .	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ(подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex-</i> .	Пра-, ( <i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; прáдътъ, <i>great grandfather</i> ).
Для, for.	Пре- or <i>пере-</i> , beyond, <i>trans-</i> ; <i>re-</i> .
До, as far as, until.	Предъ <i>or</i> <i>péredъ</i> ( <i>предо</i> ), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-зá, from behind.	Рáди, for the sake of.
Изъ-пóдъ, from under.	Раз- or <i>раз-</i> ( <i>разо</i> ), apart, <i>se-</i> .
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозь, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, су-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	У, at; by, near. [ing.
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de-</i> .	Чрезъ <i>or</i> <i>чéрезъ</i> , through; dur-
О or объ (обо), of; round; against.	

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О'коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О'кресть, around.
Вмáсто, instead of.	Опричь, except, excepting.
Внутрь <i>and</i> внутри, within.	Повéрхъ, upon, above.
Внъ, out of, without.	Пóдъ, beside.
Возлъ, beside.	Позадí <i>and</i> позáдъ, behind.
Вотрекъ, against, in spite of.	Пóслъ, after.
Крómъ, besides, except.	Прéждe; before.
Мéжду <i>or</i> мéжъ, between, among.	Прóтивъ <i>or</i> <i>протíву</i> , against.
Мýмо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадí, behind.	Сзади <i>or</i> <i>созади</i> , from behind.
Насупротíвъ, opposite.	Средí <i>and</i> средъ, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not notwithstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсуждёніи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *пасынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ умѣя*, *a man without talent*; *просьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо къ дрѹгу*, *a letter to a friend*; *скѣзка о лисицѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ (ко)*, *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за* and *изъ-подъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ (воз, взо)*, *вы*, *низ (низо)*, *па*, *пра*, *пре (пере)*, *раз (роз, разо)* and *су*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus:

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, позъ-подъ, отъ, ради and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb *вопрекі* require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb *межъ* or *межъ*, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

#### EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From  
 Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ свѣтѣ. Отъ  
 the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you  
 до лѣса (если) два верстѣ. О чѣм ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the говорить? Я трудиться для общій благо. Между

house and the garden there is a large court with stables. домъ и садъ (есть) пространный дворъ съ конюшня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign Ради Богъ не унывать. Любовь къ государъ

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier и отечество. Онъ жить у свой дядя. Солдатъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes выскочить изъ-за кустъ. Лучъ солнечный проникать

through the water. This man is at death's door. сквозь воду. Этотъ человѣкъ (есть) при смерть.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under Птица летать подъ облако. Я положить книга подъ

the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. Му столъ. Садиться за столъ и сидѣть за столъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at братъѣхатъ въ Москвѣ, потому что онъ жена жить въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass Москвѣ. Орёлъ сидѣть на дрёво. Этотъ рюмка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my разбиваться на мѣлкій часть. Я досадовать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others. братъ за онъ лѣнность. Не заботиться о дѣло чужой.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table. Мой другъ ушибаться объ уголь столъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves, Вода течь съ крѣвля. Вотъ дрёво съ листъ,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of но безъ цветъ. Этотъ собака быть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the корова. Дитя бѣгать по дворъ и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.  
садъ. Я работать отъ первый по пятый числъ Августъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.

Онъ носить трауръ по свой братъ.

### THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не только . . . но, и, not only . . . but even.
Буде, if, provided.	Нежели, than.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Ни, нижé, neither, nor; not
Впрочемъ, as for the rest.	Но, but. [even.
Да, and, but; let.	Однако, however.
Дабы, that, in order that.	Посему, then.
Для тогó что, because.	Потому что, because.
Ежели <i>and</i> е́сли, if, in case, when.	Правда, it is true.
Же <i>or</i> жъ, then, also.	Пускай <i>or</i> пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Сколь ни, whatever.
Ибо, because.	Следовательно, consequently,
Или <i>or</i> иль, ог.	To, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Тогó ради, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	Только <i>and</i> тóкмо, only, merely.
Какъ-то, for instance.	Хотя, though, although.
Когда, when, whenever.	Хотя бы, even though.
Ли <i>or</i> лъ ( <i>interrogative</i> ); if, whether.	Что, that.
Либо, either, or.	Чтобы <i>or</i> чтобъ, that, in order that.
Лишь, just, as soon as.	Чемъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: •кто, что, который, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; како́й, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: где, кудá, *where*; откуда, *whence*; доколъ, *how long*; сколько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

*thus; пока́, as much as; тъмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ . . . тъмъ, the more . . . the more; ча́стію, in part, &c.*

### EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.  
Мой дядя родіться и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do  
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровы? Ежели ты  
not come I shall be angry. Ask him if he  
не пріезжать, то я осердиться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ  
will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не  
хотѣть уѣхать, или вознамѣриться оставаться дома. Онъ  
distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.  
заботиться болѣе о братѣ, нежели о сестрѣ.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive  
Пріятно дѣлать добро другоѣ, чѣмъ получать  
benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.  
благотвореніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійті; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live  
Не да солнце заставаѣ ты на ложе. Да здравствоватъ  
the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will  
Царь. Чѣмъ ты учиться прилѣжно, тѣмъ учёне быть  
be easy to thee.  
лѣгкій для ты.

### THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! га! expressing joy; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахті! expressive of pain; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate fear; тфу! indicates aversion; уфъ! expresses fatigue; ну! нуже! are used to encourage; сть! тсъ! to impose silence; эй! гей! to call.

## SECOND PART

## S Y N T A X.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласование), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управление), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размещение), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

## CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g.: *Богъ есть всемогущъ*, *God is almighty*; *науки (суть) полезны*, *the sciences are useful*; *Москвá была слáвна*, *Moscow has been celebrated*; *Азия будéть спокóйна*, *Asia will be tranquil*; *сóлице взошлó*, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: *орёль есть хищная птица*, *the eagle*

*is a bird of prey*; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: луна есть спутница земли, *the moon is the satellite of the earth*.

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. вы сáми, другъ мой, нездорóвы, *you yourself, my friend, are indisposed*; бýдьте свидътелемъ, *be a witness*. — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. у него есть дéньги, *he has money*; у него бýли дéньги, *he had money*; у него бýдутъ дéньги, *he will have money*. — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: Егó Велíчество (Король) нездорóвъ, *His Majesty (the King) is indisposed*; Ей Сíтельство (Графиня) бýла здéсь, *Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here*; Егó Свáтлость (Князь) прогуливáлся, *His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk*.

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender*, *number* and *case*; e. g. Вéликíй Петръ преобразовáль обши́рную Россíю, *Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire*. If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. слéзы, утешéниe несчáстныхъ, *у него изсéкли, tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him*.

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. лéность и прáздность (суть) вредны, *laziness and inactivity are pernicious*. If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. *зима или весна тебе приятна?* *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs *много*, *much*; *мало*, *little*; *сколько*, *how much*; *несколько*, *some*; e. g. *умирать за отчество (есть) славно и приятно*, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; *сколько пришло семействъ*, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. *древний городъ Ойвы*, *the ancient city of Thebes*; *славная река Дунай*, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. *славные царя и царицы*, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: *ты и я гуляемъ вмѣстѣ*, *thou and I walk together*; *ты и онъ не знаете что дѣлать*, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of *одинъ*, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. *двадцать одинъ рубль*, *twenty one rubles*; *тысяча одна ночь*, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the *verb* of the *phrase* in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о котóромъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak.* The pronoun чей, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny.*

#### EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was  
 Зима пріятный. Человѣкъ смѣртный. Новгородъ быть  
 rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king  
 богатый. Россія быть обширный имперація. Волга быть царь  
 of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.  
 рѣка русский. Мой пріятель, ты быть довѣрочный.

We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some  
 У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра  
 money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His  
 дѣнги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial  
 Превосходительство (*генералъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорский  
 Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography  
 Высочество (*Великий Князь*) быть довѣрочный. Географія  
 and history are very useful branches of knowledge.  
 и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?  
 Трудный молчать. Сколько дитя быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.  
 Москва знаменитый; градъ

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely  
 Китай многолюдный; государство

peopled. **Н**e has thirty one horses. The book  
**У** онъ быть тридцать одинъ лошадь. **К**нига,  
 which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is  
 который ты читать, очень забавный. **В**отъ  
 the man by whose works we profit.  
**человѣкъ, (instr.)** чей трудъ пользоваться

## DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle of gerund, require the same *cases*; e. g. *вредить ближнему*, *to do harm to his neighbour*; *вредящий ближнему*, *doing harm to his neighbour*; *вредъ ближнему*, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; *вредъ ближнему*, *the harm done to his neighbour*; *вредный ближнему*, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; *вредно ближнему*, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different *cases*; e. g. *говорить правду*, *to speak the truth*; *говорить о дѣлѣ*, *to speak of an affair*; *говорить языкомъ*, *to speak a language*; *говорить съ другомъ*, *to speak with a friend*; *отказать просыглю*, *to refuse a petitioner*; *отказать въ просьбѣ*, *to refuse a request*; *отказать въ домѣ*, *to bequeath a house*; *отказать отъ должности*, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: *играль на флейтѣ*, *he played on the flute*; *заняграль на флейтѣ*, *he began to play on the flute*; *поягравъ на флейтѣ*, *занялся онъ чтенiemъ*, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; *вчера сыгралъ на флейтѣ претрудное сочиненіе*, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; *онъ доняграль на флейтѣ начатое на скрипка*,

*he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin;*  
 отыграль на флейте въ полночь, *he ceased playing on the flute at midnight.* Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. *писать письмо*, *to write a letter*; *восписать хвалу*, *to confer praises upon*; *выйсать въ книгу*, *to inscribe in the book*; *выйсать изъ книги*, *to extract from a book*; *записать въ службу*, *to enter on the service*; *надписать адресъ*, *to write an address*; *отписать къ другу*, *to inform a friend*; *переписать на бѣло*, *to make a fair copy*; *приписать строчку*, *to add a line*; *прописать всю службу*, *to describe the whole service*; *расписать комнату*, *to paint a room*; *списаться съ приятелемъ*, *to correspond with a friend*. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same *preposition* and the same *case* as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

ВОЗОГІЗ,	на;	взойти на гору, <i>to ascend the mountain.</i>
ВОЗОВІЗ,	въ;	вступать въ домъ, <i>to enter in the house.</i>
ВЫІЗ,	изъ;	выйти изъ лѣсу, <i>to issue from the forest.</i>
ДОІ,	до;	доѣхать до города, <i>to go as far as the town.</i>
ЗАІ,	за;	закинуть за спину, <i>to throw behind one's self.</i>
ИЗІ,	изъ;	извлечь изъ книги, <i>to extract from a book.</i>
НАІ,	на;	навьючить на лошадь, <i>to place upon a horse.</i>
НАДІ,	надъ;	надсматривать надъ дѣтьми, <i>to watch over the children.</i>
НАЗІ,	съ;	назлетѣть съ крыши, <i>to fly down from the roof</i>
ОТІ,	отъ;	оторвать отъ работы, <i>to tear from labour.</i>
ПЕРЕІ,	чрезъ;	перескочить чрезъ ровъ, <i>to leap across a ditch.</i>
ПОДІ,	подъ;	подложить подъ голову, <i>to put under his head.</i>
ПРЕДІ,	предъ;	предстать предъ судѣй, <i>to present himself before the judges.</i>
ПРИІ,	къ;	къ другу, <i>to come to a friend.</i>
ПРОІ,	сквозь;	пройти сквозь огнь, <i>to pass through the fire.</i>
ПРОІЗІ,	отъ;	произойти отъ болѣзни, <i>to arise from a disease.</i>
РАЗІ,	на;	разрѣзать на части, <i>to cut into pieces.</i>
СОІСІ,	съ;	скинуть съ себѣ, <i>to throw off one's self.</i>

Verbs formed with the preposition

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *солнце светить*, *the sun shines*; *море шумѣть*, *the sea*

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: *орёль есть птица*, *the eagle is a bird*; *Адамъ былъ человекъ*, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: *Богъ есть всемогущъ*, *God is almighty*; *Славяне были храбры*, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: *мой братъ былъ въ то время кадетомъ*, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; *онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ*, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination *vocative.* of the person addressed; e. g. *Боже, спаси Царя!*  
*God, save the Tsar!* *Господи, помилуй меня!*  
*Lord, have mercy upon me!*

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; *Accusative.* as: *птица пьётъ воду*, *the bird drinks the water*; *я погасилъ свечу*, *I have put out the candle*; *мой соседъ купилъ домъ*, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: *питьё воды*, *the drinking of the water*; *погашение свечи*, *the putting out of the candle*; *покупка дома*, *the purchase of a house*.—2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: *я писалъ*

*всю ночь*, *I have written the whole night*; *онъ проѣхалъ verstу*, *he has run a verst.*—3) After the prepositions *въ*, *на*, *за*, *подъ*, *предъ*, *про*, *сквозь*, *чрезъ*, *въ* or *объ*, *но* and *съ* (§ 77).

**Dative** The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. *ты пόдалъ милостыню бѣдному*, *thou hast given alms to the poor man.*—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions *предъ* and *со* (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs *благо*, *противъ* and *прѣко*; as: *осень предшѣствуетъ зимѣ*, *autumn precedes winter*; *не прекослѣвь старшимъ*, *do not contradict the aged.*—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. *мы подражаемъ дрѣвнимъ*, *we imitate the ancients*; *не льсти богатымъ*, *do not flatter the rich*; *служи усѣрдно Государю*, *serve the sovereign with zeal.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: *подражаніе дрѣвнимъ*, *the imitation of the ancients*; *лесть богатымъ*, *flattery to the rich.*—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: *быть бѣдѣ*, *there will be a misfortune*; *не видать намъ ясныхъ дней*, *we shall see no more fine days.*—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: *мнѣ хочется есть*, *I want to eat*; *вамъ нездоровится*, *you are indisposed.*—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. *приятный слухъ*, *agreeable to the ear*; *жить при-*

лично своему состоянию, to live suitably to one's condition.—7) After the prepositions *къ* and *но*, and the adverb *вонрекъ* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, *a)* to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моймъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; *b)* to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иваномъ, *they call him John*; тебѣ почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the *instrumental*; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердцъ and сердцами, *to move the hearts*.—2) With the verb *быть* and *бывать*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хоцетъ быть любымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быватъ тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative).—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрегать опасностью, *to despise danger*; владѣть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the *instrumental*; as: пренебреженіе опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владѣніе имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property*.—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: любъ.

*white in the face; широ́къ плéчами, broad in the shoulders.*—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: *плыть мóремъ, to go by sea; весною сéять, one sows in spring; нóчью спя́ть, one sleeps at night.*—6) After the prepositions *за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ*, and the adverb *мéжду or ме́жсъ* (§ 77).

**Genitive** The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: *хозяи́нъ дóма, the master of the house; дóмъ сосéдa, the house of the neighbour; сынъ солдáта, the son of a soldier.* The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: *домóвый хозяи́нъ, сосéдний дóмъ, солдáтский сынъ.* The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: *другъ бráту, the friend of the brother; цéнá мъстáмъ, the price of the places.* A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: *чай лúчшаго сóрта, a tea of superior quality; человéкъ стрóгихъ пráви́л, a man of rigid principles.*—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. *чтéниe кни́ги, the reading of a book; знáниe дíла, the knowledge of an affair.*—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: *пудъ сýна, a pood of hay; аршинъ сукна, an ell of cloth; нéсколько кни́гъ, some books.*—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: *шестáго января тысяча восемьсотъ*

четырнадцатого года, January 6th 1814.—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *ничь*, *не стало*, *не слышно*, *не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды*, *I do not like the ignorant*; *не вижу пользы*, *I do not see the advantage*; *у насъ нѣть хлѣба*, *we have no bread*; *когда мѣнѣ не бѣдетъ*, *when I shall be no more*; *не видно перемѣны*, *one sees no change*.—

6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды*, *bring me some water*; *дай мнѣ пера*, *give me your pen for a little while*. The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *наудить рыбы*, *to catch some fish*; *покосить травы*, *to mow some grass*.—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ счастія*, *we desire health*; *онъ ждетъ разсвѣта*, *he awaits daybreak*; *бояться днѣвнаго свѣта*, *to fear the light of day*; *держаться правилъ чести*, *to keep to principles of honour*. The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы*, *the desire of glory*; *лишеніе имѣнія*, *the loss of a property*.—8) After the adjectives *достойный*, *worthy*; *полный*, *full*; *чуждый*, *a stranger to*; and the adverb *жаль*, *it is a pity*; e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія*, *I am a stranger to this opinion*; *жаль ему брата*, *he is sorry for his brother*.—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоценнѣйшия*

золота, treasures more precious than gold; слонъ выше верблюда, the elephant is larger than the camel; онъ жилъ дольше всъхъ, he has lived longer than all.—10) After the prepositions *безъ*, *для*, *до*, *изъ*, *изъ-за*, *изъ-подъ*, *отъ*, *ради*, *съ* and *у*, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions *для* and *ради* are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бóга and Бóга *для*, *for God's sake*; *ради* чéсти and чéсти *ради*, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

*Prepositional.* The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions *въ*, *на*, *о* or *объ*, *но* and *пру* (§ 77).

#### EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

*Nominative* Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great  
Вода быть стихíя. Александръ Македонский быть великий  
captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father  
полководецъ. Татаринъ быть свирепый. Мой <sup>дядь</sup> was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said  
быть офицеръ; <sup>тогда</sup> говорить that the comets have been or will be once planets.  
что комéта быть или быть ещé планéта.

*Accusative* The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest  
Дождь освежать землю. Злодай ненавидѣть честный men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined  
люди. Буря, опустошать нашъ поле, разорять many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has  
многие послáнинъ. Говорить всегда правда. Мой братъ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst, on horseback.  
больной весь зима. Я ехать целий верстя верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against  
Ты хвалить за прилежание. Онъ удариться объ  
the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son  
стѣнѣ. Я сидѣть въ водѣ по шея. Сынъ  
is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of  
ростъ съ отѣцъ, и дочь почти съ  
the mother.  
матъ.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior dauntless.  
Скупецъ предпочитать деньги слава, и воинъ  
prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the  
слава деньги. Молния предшествовать  
thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures  
громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпение. Эта картина  
please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,  
ирбвиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,  
and do good to him who has offended thee. There will  
и дѣлать добро обижать ты. Быть  
be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes  
чудо. Горький слеза литься. Ребёнокъ хотѣться  
to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend  
пить. Не приличный сильный человѣкъ обижать  
the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of  
слабый. Подражаніе Иисусъ Христосъ. Любовь къ  
virtue and the hatred of vice.  
добротѣль и ненависть къ пороку.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instrumental.  
Видѣть глазъ, осязать рука, слышать  
the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.  
ухо, обонять носъ, вкушать языкомъ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakov by Potemkin.  
Измайль взята. Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Evey body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves  
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Большой шевелить  
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here  
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь  
one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for  
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвование жизнь за  
his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak  
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый  
in head. One must rise in the morning, work during  
голова. Надобно вставать утро, работать  
the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.  
день, отыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.  
Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on  
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ  
your success.  
вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick.  
Сынъ мой искренний другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой  
witted children are often delicate. There has been made  
умъ дитя быватъ нерѣдко хилый. Составлять  
a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.  
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печёне хлѣбъ.  
I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such  
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дрова. Столько  
labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians  
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій  
took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but  
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не есть хлѣбъ, но  
I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.  
пить вода. Я есть хлѣбъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there Я получать не ни письмо, ни посыка. Въ ётотъ письмо нить is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish ни однъ ошибка. Доставать я дёныги. Войниж жалѣть for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for битва и искать слава. Славолюбецъ жаждать honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour. почесть. Ты хотѣть богатство, и бояться трудъ. The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred Бочка полный вино. Добрый человѣкъ чуждый злоба and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier и зависть. Золото дорогой серебро; свинецъ тяжелъ than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is жалѣзо. Онъ просить милостыни Христосъ ради. Отдыхъ agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain пріятный послѣ работы. Вдоль ётотъ берегъ тянуться цѣпь of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages. гора. Волкъ бродить около деревни.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the Prepositional. Мой братъ хранить присутствие духъ при весь troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous непріятность въ жизнь. Сей городъ построить на крутой bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. Не берегъ быстрый рѣка. Церковь о пять глава. Онъ weeps over his father. плакать по свой отецъ.

## THE FAIRY.

Волшебница.

The different rules of Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled Однъ вдовѣ имѣть два дочь: старый быть похожий на her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was свой матер и лицо и нравъ, то есть, онъ быть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody  
такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто  
loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was  
не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Малый же быть  
beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her  
прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ  
malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her;  
злый мать и злый сестра ненавидѣть онъ;  
they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged  
бранить безпрестанно; онъ одиный быть долженъ  
to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms,  
работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горница,  
to cook. The poor child wept from morning till  
стрипать въ кухня. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утра до  
night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was  
вечеръ, но онъ не лѣниться работать; быть  
obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for  
послушный, терпеливый, и весь этоѣ быть напрасный, ибо  
she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and  
мочь не ничтѣ угодѣть на свой злой мать и на  
her wicked sister.  
свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with  
Ежедиѣно этоѣ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должны ходить съ  
a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood,  
большой кувшинъ за водѣ въ ближній роща,  
where there was a clear spring. One day she  
въ который находиться чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ  
had gone according to custom to this spring. The day  
пойти по обыкновеніе къ этоѣ источникъ. День  
was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water,  
быть очень жаркій. Наполнить кувшинъ водѣ,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her онъ возвраща́ться домо́й. Вдругъ ви́дѣть предъ себѧ an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman, старушка. «Мой дитя!». скáзыва́ть онъ старушка, "give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." — «дава́ть я напи́вáться; я устава́ть; я (быть) жárkij.» — "With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here Съ охóта, бáбушка, скáзыва́ть дívушка, «вотъ! drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman. напи́вáться.» И онъ подава́ть кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and Старушка сади́ться на трава́ отъ слáбость, а the young girl kneeled down before her, and молодой красáвица станови́ться на колéно перéдъ онъ, и

held gently the pitcher, while she drank. поддéрживать осторóжно кувшинъ, пока онъ пить вода.

"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after «Благодарить ты, милый!» скáзыва́ть старушка,

having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable напи́вáться. «Видеть, что ты (есмь) добрый, лáсковыи child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness. дитя, и хотéть награждáть ты за твой уолúжливость.

Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur- Знать же, я волшéбница, и взять на себѧ на- posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof. рóчно видъ старушка, чтобы ты испытывать.

I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what Рáдоваться, что ты (есмь) такой добрый, и вотъ, что I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce хотéть сдѣлать для ты: вóйкij разъ, что ты скáзыва́ть a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty слéво, выпада́ть изъ у ты ротъ или прекрасный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.  
цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.

Прости, дружокъ. И волшебница изчеза.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast  
Прекрасный девочка возвращаться домой. «Где  
thou been so long", asked her mother with ill  
ты быть такъ долго, спрашивать у онъ мать съ  
humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"  
сърдце? — «Что ты делать такъ долго въ роща?»,  
cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the  
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замышкаться»,  
way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant  
отвѣтить бѣднѣжка, и въ тотъ самый минута  
there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,  
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина  
and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed  
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» воскликнуть  
the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious  
мать удивлѣнны. «Этотъ цветы! этотъ драгоценны  
stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl  
камень! Что сдѣляться съ ты? — Красавица раз-  
related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,  
скаживать онъ простодушно о свой встрѣча съ волшебница  
and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls  
и между тотъ цветы, алмазъ и жемчугъ  
issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered  
сканьтися такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошъ же!» проворчать  
the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder  
мать; «Завтра послать въ роща мой старый  
daughter, and it will be the same with her."  
дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:  
И на другой утре онъ сказывать свой дочь:

“To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but  
«Нынче ты пойти за водѣ: взять кувшинъ; но  
pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,  
смотреть же, если встрѣтъ у источникъ старушка,  
give her to drink, and be very civil to her.”  
давать онъ напиваться; и хорошенько приласкиваться къ онъ.”

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill  
Злой девчонка нахмуриваться, взять кувшинъ съ  
humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled  
досада; пойти въ роща нѣхотя, и ворчать  
all along the road. . The good old woman was already  
весь въ дорожа. Старушка сидѣть ужѣ  
seated near the spring. “Draw me some water, my  
у источникъ. «Зачерпать я вода, мой  
dear!” said she to the young girl; “it is hot, I wish  
милый!” сказать онъ девочка; «(естѣ) жаркий, хотѣть  
to drink.” — “What stuff! I am not come here  
напиваться.” — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не прйті сюда за то,  
to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink  
чтобы услуживать старый бродяга напиваться и  
without me.” — “How rude thou art!” said the old  
безъ я. — «Какой же грубый ты!» сказывать ста-  
woman to her; “I will punish thee. From this moment with  
рушка онъ; «я наказывать ты. Съ этой поры при  
each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either  
каждый твой слово выпадать изъ у ты ротъ или  
a serpent or a frog.” She disappeared, and the wicked  
змѣй или лягушка.» Онъ изчезать, а злой  
girl ran home after having broken her pitcher  
девчонка побежать домой разбивъ свой кувшинъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?" съ досада. «Что скáывать, мýлый! "дóчка?" asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. — спрáшивать мать, видеть онъ издалека. — "I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all «Нéчто скáывать!» отвéчать дочь; и at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two вдругъ выскáкивать изъ онъ ротъ два змéя и два toads. "What do I see! what ho!gog!" cried the mother; жéба. «Что я видѣть! какóй страхъ!» закричать мать; "but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I «но твой сестрá (естé) виноватýй въ весь этотъ! Я will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl. давать онъ знать.» И онъ бросаться бить меньшой дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in Испугáться угрóза, онъ скрываться въ the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her, рóща, бéгать дóлго, не сместь оглядываться, fled very far and at last lost herself. But this забвéять далекó, и наконéць потерять дорóга. Но этотъ was for her good. The son of the king, who was быть къ онъ счаstie. Сынъ цáрский, который amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just забавляться тутъ охóта, находиться въ тóть then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated врéмя въ рóща; увидеть красавица, который, сидеть on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to на травá, плáкатъ горько. «Что сдѣлаться съ thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking ты? о что ты плáкатъ, мýлый?» спрáшивать онъ, взять her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help отъ лáскою за рукá. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She плáкать! Мáтушка выгонять я изъ домъ.»

Онъ spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from говорить, а цветъ и драгоценный камень сыпаться съ her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls. рóзовый гúба, и слезá обращаться въ жемчúжина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king; «Что значить этотъ?» спрашивать сынъ цáрский; "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?" «отъ что этотъ цветъ, жемчúгъ и камень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had Бедняжка рассказывать цáрский сынъ о тотъ, что

happened to her. He became in love with her, and случаться съ онъ. Онъ полюбить онъ, и

he loved her more on account of her being so good and полюбить еще боле за то, что онъ быть такъ добрый и so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious милый, нéжели за онъ цветъ и драгоценный

stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king камень. Онъ взять онъ съ себя, представлять онъ царь,

his father, whom she pleased also, and the king свой отéцъ, который онъ понравиться также, и царь

permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became позволять сынъ жениться на онъ. Такой образъ онъ сдѣлаться

a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband царéвна, а по смерть царь, когда онъ мужъ

mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen, восходить на престоль, отцóвский, царица,

and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what и быть добрый царица. А онъ злой сестра, что

happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable сдѣлаться съ онъ? Онъ кончать свой жизнь жалостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престáнно, быть принуждённый выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation and hunger. никто не хотéть дава́ть онъ пристáнище, и онъ скрывáться въ лвъ, где умирáть скоро съ досада и голодъ.

### CONSTRUCTION

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гéній и даровáнія умá имъютъ пра́во на благодár- the gratitude of the nations, ность народовъ, то Россия Russia owes a monument to должна Ломоносову монумéн- Lomonossof. *Karamзин.*  
томъ. *Карамзин.*

Побáды, завоевáнія и величіе The victories, the conquests государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire, духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence счастливое дѣйствіе и на сáмый of the Russian nation, had a языкъ егó, который, будучи happy influence even on the управляемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, мѣсть равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и прѣтности съ лѣшими языками дрѣвности и нашихъ времёнъ.

*Karamzîn.*

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширнотю мѣсть, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но купно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и довѣльствиемъ великъ перѣдъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говоривъ, что Испанскімъ языкомъ съ Божомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмѣцкимъ съ непрѣтелями, Италійскимъ съ женскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку быль искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми бымыми говорить пристойно. Ибо нашелъ бы въ нѣмъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крѣпость Нѣмѣцкаго, нѣжность Италійскаго, сверхъ того багатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латинскаго языка.

*Lomonosov.*

ployed by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times. *Karamzin.*

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin. *Lomonosov.*

## THIRD PART

— 40 —

## ORTHOGRAPHY.

## USE OF THE LETTERS.

85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

**Vowels.** 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

жиль (and not <i>жилье</i> ), <i>a fortification</i> , (and not <i>жильё</i> ), <i>an egg</i> , . . . .	жиль (primitive word), <i>a relay</i> .
(and not <i>жилье</i> ), <i>barley</i> , . . . .	жильца (nom. plur.), <i>eggs</i> .
(and not <i>жеку</i> ), <i>I draw</i> , . . . .	жильный (derivative), <i>of barley</i> .
(and not <i>жечь</i> ), <i>I bind</i> , . . . .	жинуть (3d pers. pl.), <i>they draw</i> .
жалью (and not <i>желлю</i> ), <i>I pity</i> .	жинешь (2d pers. sing.), <i>thou bindest</i>
жальуль (and not <i>желуль</i> ), <i>a rogue</i> , (and not <i>чесн</i> ), <i>a watch</i> , . . . .	жаль (primitive), <i>pity</i> .
(and not <i>жедитъ</i> ), <i>to spare</i> ,	жальость (derivative), <i>roguey</i> .
молитва (and not <i>малитва</i> ), <i>a prayer</i> .	часъ (primitive), <i>the hour</i> .
вдова (and not <i>вдаса</i> ), <i>the widow</i> , .	пощада (derivative), <i>pardon</i> .
говорить (and not <i>заявить</i> ), <i>to speak</i> ,	онъ молитъ (3d pers. sing.), <i>he prays</i> .
	вдобы (nom. plur.), <i>the widows</i>
	говоръ, <i>speaking</i> , & разговръ, <i>discourse</i> .

we write

because we say

**E. Ь.** — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ъ*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ъ* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: *кадѣть*, *a cadet*; *слѣсарь*, *a locksmith* (*Germ. Schlosser*); *пёня*, *fine* (*Lgt. *pana**), excepting in *Віана*, *Vienna*, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *u* (or *i*) is changed in the derivatives into *ъ*; as: *бесѣда*, *conversation*; *дѣти*, *children*; *Алексѣй*, *Alexis*; *Сергѣй*, *Sergius*; *Апрѣль*, *April* (from *сидѣть*, *to be seated*; *дитѣ*, *child*; *Алексѣй*, *Sergi*, *Апрілій*). In the words *лѣкарь*, *a physician*; *лѣкарство*, *a medicine*; *лѣчить*, *to heal*, &c.; which some persons write *лѣкарь*, *лекарство*, *лечить*, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ъ*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ъ* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write

(and not <i>слѣза</i> ), <i>the tear</i> , . . . . .	слѣзы (nom. plur.), <i>the tears</i> .
ель (and not <i>ѣль</i> ), <i>the fir</i> , . . . . .	ѣлка (diminutive), <i>a little fir</i> .
берёзникъ (and not <i>берѣзникъ</i> ), <i>a birch copse</i> .	берёза (primitive), <i>a birch</i> .
лѣдникъ (and not <i>лѣдникъ</i> ), <i>an ice-house</i> .	лѣдъ (primitive), <i>ice</i> .
утвердѣть (and not <i>утвердіть</i> ), <i>to affirm</i> .	твёрдый (primitive), <i>firm</i> .
утгнѣтѣніе (and not <i>утгнѣтеніе</i> ), <i>persecution</i> .	гнѣтъ (primitive), <i>stick for packing</i> .

**Е. Ә.** — The vowel *ә* is used at the beginning of the Russian words *әй*, *ho!* *әхъ*, *hey!* *әтотъ*, *this*; *әкай* and *әтакай*, *oh what!* also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. *әкваторъ*, *the equator*; *әзіръ*, *ether*; *поәма*, *a poem*;

поэть, *a poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in *шіоса*, *a piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *ə* was in use, are written with *e*; as: *евангелие*, *the gospel*; *епіскопъ*, *a bishop*; *епархія*, *a diocese*; *евнукъ*, *an eunuch*; *Европа*, *Europe*, and some others. The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *ge* and *ge*; as *проектъ*, *a project*; *реестръ*, *a register*; *ефесь*, *the sword-hilt*, *ефрейторъ*, *a corporal* (*Lat. projectum*, *register*; *Germ. Gefäß*, *Gefreiter*).

И. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: *clé*, *that*; *пріучать*, *to accustom*; *пріятный*, *agreeable*; *гénій*, *genius*, as also in the word *миръ*, *the world*, and its derivatives: *мирскóй*, *worldly*; *всемірный*, *universal*; *Владіміръ*, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from *миръ*, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: *мирный*, *peaceful*; *мирить*, *to reconcile*; *смирный*, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: *пяти-аршинный*, *of five yards*; *семи-угольный*, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word *мýро*, *the holy oil*, and its derivatives: *муропомáзаніе*, *unction*; *муронбóница*, *bearer of aromatics*; *муропомáзанникъ*, *the Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter *йхоница* has been retained.

И. ІІ. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *ə* and *u*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: *предъидущій*, *preceding*; *безъимінныі*, *anonymous*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of *искать*, *to seek*, and *играть*, *to play*, that the letters *ə* and *u* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. *сыщикъ*, *an emissary*; *рóзыскъ*, *the inquiry*; *сыгра́ться*, *to play quits*; *разыгра́ть*, *to raffle for* (instead of *сыйщикъ*, *рбзыскъ*, *сигигра́ться*, *разигигра́ться*). — In foreign words after *у*, the vowel *u* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write *медицина*, *medicine*; *циркуль*, *compasses*; *цифра* (which some persons write *цифра*), *a cipher*; excepting *цигáнь*, *a gypsy*, and *цигáры*, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ыть* and *ий*, as: *постный*, *of Lent*; *лётный*, *of summer*, and its compounds: *совершеннолётний*, *of full age*; *столéтний*, *centenary*; &c.; the word *малолётный*, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ъ, ь, ѹ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), ѿ being half of the vowel о, ь and ѹ half of the vowel и.

The semi-vowel ѿ at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel ь cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (н). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: братъ, *the brother*, and братъ, *to take*; пыль, *dust*, and пыль, *dust*; станъ, *the stature*, and станъ, *become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: ножъ, *a knife*, and ложъ, *a lie*; мечъ, *a sword*, and сечъ, *to cut*; камышъ, *the reed*, and мышъ, *a mouse*; тощъ, *fasting*, and нощъ, *the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel ь is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, н; e. g. судьба, *destiny*; весьма, *very*; обезьяна, *a monkey*; дёныги, *money*; письмо, *a letter*; польза, *utility*; сельдь, *a herring*; тюрьма, *the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel ѿ, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, е, и, ю, я; as: отъёмлю, *I take away*; предъидущий, *preceding*; въехать, *to enter*; объюродить, *to become a fool*; объявить, *to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words адъютантъ, *an adjutant*; объективный, *objective*.

The semi-vowels ь and ѹ are sufficiently distinct; the former (ь) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (ю) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, с, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

we write:

бобъ, a bean, and цвѣтъ, a flail,	боба and цвѣта.
ловъ, capture, and граѣтъ, a count,	лова and граѣта.
кругъ, a circle, and крюкъ, a hook,	круга and крюка.
Богъ, God, and духъ, spirit,	Бога and духа.
клѣдъ, treasure, and братъ, brother.	клѣда and брата.
ножъ, a knife, and ковшъ, a scoop,	ножа and ковша.
тузъ, the ace, and усъ, the mustache,	тузъ and уса
трубка, a pipe, and шапка, a cap,	трубокъ and шапокъ
лѣжка, a bench, and фёлѣка, a blow-pipe,	лѣжокъ and фёлѣкъ
булка, sentry-box, and єтка, a duck,	булокъ and єтка.
круїжка, a goblet, and мѣшка, little fly,	круїжка and мѣшка.
сказка, a tale, and пляска, a dance,	сказокъ and пляса

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

просѣба, a prayer (and not прѣбѣба), . . .	просить, to pray, from the root про-
женѣтъба, marriage (and not женихѣба), . .	женѣтъ, to marry (in Sl. женихѣти).
бѣдоношникъ, a sentry (and not бѣтоношникъ), . .	бѣдка, sentry-box, gen. pl. бѣдокъ.
присутствіе, presence (and not присудоміе), . .	суть, 3d pers. pl. of есмь, I am.
жжёный, burnt (and not єжёный), . . .	жжёшь, 2d pers. sing. of жгу, I bi.
рабочникъ, a hazel-ken (and not рабчикъ), . .	рабой, with variegated feathers.
гречневый, of buck-wheat (and not грѣшневый), . .	грѣба, buck-wheat, <i>u</i> being immutab.
свѣчникъ, a candlestick (and not свѣлникъ), . .	свѣча, a candle, from свѣтъ, light.
гудочникъ, violinist (and not гудышникъ), . .	гудокъ, violin, <i>m</i> and <i>k</i> change into
вѣтобинникъ, rag-gatherer (and not вѣточникъ), . .	вѣтошь, a rag, from вѣтѣкъ, old.
наўшникъ, slanderer (and not научникъ), . .	ухо, the ear, <i>x</i> changes into <i>u</i> .
Волошскій, Walachian (and not волоѣскій), . .	Волоѣгъ, a Walachian, <i>x</i> ch. into <i>u</i> .
Волжскій, of the Volga (and not вѣлжскій), . .	Волга, the Volga, <i>x</i> changes into <i>u</i> .

The present orthography of the word поручикъ, a lieutenant (from поручить, to commit, from рука, the hand), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being чикъ (as in потаѣчикъ, an indulger, from потакаѣть, to connive, from такъ, thus), it ought to be written порутчикъ, as some persons still write it. Another exception is свѣтъба, wedding (formerly свѣтъба), from свѣтъ, to ask in marriage.

The word столпъ, a column, is written in Slavonic with a *n*, as also its derivatives: столпникъ, the stylite; столпово-рѣніе, the building of the tower of Babel; but in Russian it is written with a *b*, столбъ, a consonant which is retained in the words столбовой, columnar; отолбчакъ, basalt; столбнікъ, tetanus; остоянѣнѣть, to be stupefied.

3. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *из* or *изъ*, *изъ*, *из*, *изъ*, *изъ* or *изъ*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, *to remember*; *воспитание*, *education*; *исключить*, *to exclude*; *нисходить*, *to descend*; *расторгнуть*, *to tear up*; *рольница*, *a catalogue* (instead of *вспомнить*, *вспомнение*, *изключить*, *нисходить*, *расторгнуть*, *рольница*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *шъ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, *formerly*; *раззвѣстій*, *to open*; *изчезнуть*, *to disappear*; *воашестіе*, *accession*; *разщѣть*, *a slit*. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, *incomparable*; *чрезчуръ*, *excessively* (and not *бесподобный*, *чрезчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *съ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбѣвить*, *to diminish*; *сдѣлать*, *to make*; *сгонять*, *to drive off*; *сжимать*, *to compress* (and not *збѣвить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

Ц. — The compound consonant *ц*, cannot be used instead of *mc* or *dc*, when *m* and *d* are radical letters, and *c* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плотскій*, *carnal*, from *плоть*, *the flesh*; *персидскій*, *Persian*, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плюцкій*, *персіцкій*); but we write: *немецкій*, *German*, from *Нѣмецъ*, *a German*; *казаккій*, *Cossack's*, from *казакъ*, *a Cossack*. In the numerals we write *ди*, as: *одиццацать*, *eleven*; *двадцать*, *twenty*, words contracted from the Slavonic *одицца-на-десѧть*, *двѧ-десѧть*.

Щ. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зк*, *зсч*, *сч*, as: *вощить*, *to wax*, from *воскъ*, *wax*; *умаштать*, *to anoint*, from *масть*, *balm*; *прикащикъ*, *a clerk*, from *прикаѣть*, *an order*; *рѣщицъ*, *a cutter*, from *рѣзать*, *to cut*. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастіе*, *happiness*; *считать*, *to count*; *счѣть*, *разсчѣть*, *an account*; *мужчина*, *a man*, which must not be written *щѣстіе*, *щитать*, *щѣть*, *разщѣть*, though we also write *мужчина*.

Ф. Ѳ. — The consonants *ф* and *Ѳ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are

written with *φ*, *f* or *ph*, and the latter for Greek words written with *θ* or *th*; thus we write: фуфáйка, *a jacket*; фамилья, *a family*; физика, *physics*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Фотий, *Photius*; and рнемъ, *rhythm*; рнэма, *rhyme*; миэология, *mythology*; Феодоръ, *Theodore*; Тома, *Thomas*.

Doubling of consonants 89.—The consonants are doubled in Russian in the following cases: 1) In the words in *никъ*, *стоо*, *ный*, *ий* and *скій*, the radical of which terminates in *н* or *с*; e. g. пльнникъ, *a prisoner*, from пльнъ, *captivity*; искуство, *art*, from искуствъ, *an essay*; истинный, *true*, from истина, *the truth*; осенний, *autumnal*, from осень, *autumn*; Русскій, *Russian*, from Русь, *Russia*. The same takes place in adjectives in *енный*, and passive participles in *анний*, *янный*, *енный*, *ънний*, e. g. искуственний, *artificial*; дѣланный, *made*; заслуженный, *merited*. These participles must not be confounded with the qualifying and possessive adjectives; as: учёный, *learned*; заслуженный, *emerited*; кóжаный, *of skin*; серебряный, *of silver*, which are written with a single *н*.—2) In such words as are formed with a preposition, where the initial consonant of the primitive is the same as the final consonant of the preposition; e. g. беззубый, *toothless*; вводить, *to introduce*; пόдданный, *subject*; ссылка, *exile*.—3) In the preterit of the pronominal verbs, when the verb ends in the consonant *c*; as: разнёсся, *it has spread itself*; спáсся, *he has saved himself*.—4) When by the change of a commutable letter two consonants come together, as in the verb жгу, *I burn*, which, by the change of *z* into *ж*, is in the second person жжёшь, and in the passive participle жжёный; and in вожжá, *a rein*; вожжáть, *to bridle*.

from *водить*, *to lead*, by the change of *ð* into *ж*.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. *аббать*, *an abbot*; *суббота*, *Saturday*; *аккула*, *a shark*; *классъ*, *a class*; *колоссъ*, *a colossus*; *коллегия*, *a college*; *металль*, *a metall*, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописные буквы) are <sup>Capital</sup> <sub>letters</sub> employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

#### DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: *страсть*, *passion*; *здравъ*, *in health*; *чувство*, *of the senses* (*gen. pl.*), cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-рáда, *mitigation*; о-тráва, *poison*; без-конéч-ный, *infinite*; востóкъ, *the East*; мед-вéдь, *a bear*; рáз-умъ, *reason*; свойство, *property*; ям-шикъ, *a postilion*; зéм-скíй, *terrestrial*; друж-ба, *friendship*; Царь-гráдъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants жсд, ст, as also кс, кз, нс and джс in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. мé-жду, *between*; трí-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксáндръ, *Alexander*; э-кzáменъ, *examination*; кле-псýдра, *a clepsydra*; Рóджеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: свой, *his*; крутóе, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: поётъ, *they sing*; стрóятъ, *they build*; жалéетъ, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

#### ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian words 92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соучáстникъ, *an accomplice*; избранный, *elected*; отчётъ, *an account*; прибыль, *a gain*; мореходъ, *the navigation*; водопровóдъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: a) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. приносить, *to bring*; приносъ, *a gift*; приношénie, *the offering*; приноситель, *a bearer*, &c. b) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: нáвыкъ, *the habit*; извéстный, *known*; ветаръ, *anciently*;

нáвзничь, *backwards*; бáземъ, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. *встарину*, *formerly*; *извнъ*, *from without*; *сначала*, *in the first place*; *вследъ*, *in the footsteps*; *потому*, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. *съ начáла вéка*, *at the beginning of the century*; *по тому* слúчаю, *on this occasion*. The adverbs *во-пéрвыхъ*, *firstly*, *во-вторыхъ*, *secondly*; *по-рúсски*, *in Russian*; *по-солдáтски*, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions *изъ-зá*, *from behind*, and *изъ-подъ*, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *иъ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: *иъкто*, *some one*; *иъкоторый*, *some*; *иъкогда*, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words *никтó*, *nobody*; *ничтó*, *nothing*; *нигдé*, *никудá*, *nowhere*; *никогдá*, *never*; *никакъ*, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: *ни который*, *none*; *ни зернá*, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: *не смéю*, *I dare not*; *не здéсь*, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: *недоставáть*, *to be wanting*; *ненавíдéть*, *to hate*; *недовéрять*, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object

or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g., *неравенство нравовъ* бываетъ причиной споровъ, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *нечисовая скуча* убиваеть менѧ, *an unbearable ennui is killing me*; я гуляю неохотно, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *нётошь*, *a bat*; *негодай*, *a good-for-nothing*; *недугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незнайшій* человѣкъ, *an ignorant man*; *человѣкъ, не знающій* свойхъ обязанностей, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бз* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы* (or *чтобъ*) and *дабы*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction from the pronoun *что* with *бы*; e. g. *чтобы онъ далъ тебѣ эту книгу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы далъ я за эту книгу*, *what would I have given for this book!* In the latter case *бы* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *же* or *жс* is conjointly written in the words *уже* or *ужъ*, *already*; *даже*, *even*; *ниже*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или же*, *or even*; *однако же*, *however*; *тотъ же*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *также*, and the adverb *тоже*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *такъ же*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то*.

же, *the same*; e. g. онъ такъ же хорошо пишеть, какъ читаетъ, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ также и дворянинъ, *he is also gentleman*; я боленъ и онъ тоже, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епархія, *a diocese*; кафедра, *the pulpit* (Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάθεδρα); сенаторъ, *a senator*; корона, *a crown* (Lat. *senator*, *corona*); ажіо, *the agio*; карета, *a carriage* (Ital. *agio*, *carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; спінъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; медаль, *a medal* (Fr. *acteur*, *médaille*); брустверъ, *the parapet*; кучерь, *a coachman* (Germ. *Brustwehr*, *Kutschér*); ватерпасъ, *a level*; фарватеръ, *the channel* (Dutch: *waterpas*, *vaarwater*); вензель, *a cipher*; трактиръ, *an eating-house keeper* (Pol. *węzsel*, *traktýer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитиль, *a match*; фонарь, *a lanthorn* (mod. Gr. φυτίλη, φανάριον); алтаръ, *an altar*; мраморъ, *marble* (Lat. *altare*, *marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; мичманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпага, *a sword* (Ital. *spada*); салфетка, *a napkin*; табакерка, *a snuff-box* (Fr. *serviette*, *tabatière*); биржа, *the exchange*; тарелка, *a plate*, (Germ. *Börse*, *Teller*); шкіперъ,

*master of a merchantship*; *шлюзъ*, *a sluice* (Dutch: *schipper*, *sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: *Александръ*, *Alexander*; *Николай*, *Nicholas*; *Филиппъ*, *Philip*; *Павель*, *Paul*; *Елена*, *Helen*; *Августъ*, *Augustus*; *Юлій*, *Julius*; *Наталія*, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronunciation of both Greek and Latin; as: *Омиръ* and *Гомеръ*, *Homer*; *Алкibiадъ* and *Алцибіадъ*, *Alcibiades*; *Фивъ* and *Фебъ*, *Phæbus*; *Біотія* and *Беотія*, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: *Віантъ*, *Bias*; *Ціцеронъ*, *Cicero*; *Артеміда*, *Artemis*; *Іліада*, *the Iliad*; *Венера*, *Venus*; *Церепа*, *Ceres*.

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: *Германія*, *Germany*; *Австрія*, *Austria*; *Сицилія*, *Sicily*; *Неаполь*, *Naples*; *Флоренція*, *Florence*; *Везувій*, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: *Лондонъ*, *London*; *Чельси*, *Chelsea*; *Гриничъ*, *Greenwich*; *Мюнхенъ*, *Munich*; *Майнцъ*, *Mayence*; *Брюссель*, *Brussels*; *Маасъ*, *the Meuse*; *Шельда*, *the Scheldt*; *Рейнъ*, *the Rhine*; *Кордова*, *Cordova*; *Хересъ*, *Xeres*; *Бадахосъ*, *Badajoz*; *Схевенінгенъ*, *Schevening*; *Кельнъ*, *Cologne*; *Регенсбургъ*, *Ratisbon*; *Літтихъ*, *Liege*; *Ахенъ*, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; *Карлсруэ*, *Carlsruhe*; *Піаченца*, *Piacenza*; *Лівorno*, *Leghorn*; *Бордо*, *Bordeaux*; *Марсель*, *Marseille*; *Лоара*, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Парижъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенгáгенъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiobenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вéна, *Vienna*; Бреслáвль, *Breslau*; Торúнь, *Thorn*; Львовъ, *Lemberg*; Вéнгрия, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Шéксипръ, *Shakespeare*; Бéйронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джóнсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньютоњъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ришельё, *Richelieu*; Даву, *Davoust*; Ру́ссо, *Roussau*; Роллéнъ, *Rollin*; Делиль, *Delille*; the German names: Блюхеръ, *Blücher*; Вíландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Гайднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубини, *Cherubini*; Чимарбза, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторýскій, *Czartoryski*; Потóцкая, *Potocka*; Немцéвичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language, in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Карамзинъ, Пушкинъ, Державинъ, Шишковъ, Жуковский, Мещерский, Чичеринъ, Казанъ, Вáзьма, Ржевъ, Житомиръ, are written in English: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Shishkov*, *Zhukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitcherin*, *Kasan*, *Viasma*, *Rjef*, *Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamezine*, *Pouchekine*, *Dorjavine*, *Chichekof*, *Zoukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitchrine*, *Kasan*, *Viasma*, *Rjef*, *Zitomir*; in German: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Schischlow*, *Chalotowki*, *Meschterski*, *Tschitscherin*, *Kasan*, *Viasma* or *Wázma*, *Rjew*, *Shitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: *Москвá*, *Санктпетербургъ*, *Варшáва*, *Митáва*, and some others; in English: *Moscow*, *Saint-Petersburg*, *Warsaw*, *Mittau*; in French: *Moscou*, *Saint-Pétersbourg*, *Varsovie*, *Mittau*; in German: *Moskau*, *St. Petersburg*, *Warschau*, *Mitau*. See the particular *Vocabularies of the Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

#### ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (знаки правописания) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (ударение), the *hyphen* (единительный знакъ or черточка), the *sign of brevity* (краткая) and the *diæresis* (надстрóчное двоеточие).

1. The *accent* (') serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: *замокъ*, *a castle*, and *замóкъ*, *a lock*; *подать*, *the tax*, and *подáть*, *to give*; *стоить*, *it costs*, and *стойтъ*, *he is up*; *выходить*, *to obtain*, and *выходить*, *to go out*; *слóва*, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and *словá*, *the words* (nom. plur.). The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun *что*, to be distinguished from the conjunction *что*; e. g. *знаешь ли что тебѣ полезно*, *dost thou know what is useful to thee?* and *знаешь ли, что тебѣ полезно учénie*, *dost thou know that study is useful to thee?*.

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. *Алексан-*

дро-Нéвская Лáвра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генерáль-маиоръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицéръ, *field officier*; Ивáнъ-да-Мáрья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *so* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *mo*; as: *какъ-то*, *such as*; *что-то*, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (˘) is placed over the vowel *u* (ü), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: *мой*, *my*; *сей*, *this*; *нейдётъ*, *he does not go*; *найти*, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *dieresis* (..) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ë), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. *слёзы*, *tears*; *жёлтый*, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ö*, as in the words *Монте́скъё*, *Montesquieu*; *актёръ*, *player* (Fr. *acteur*); *Гёте*, *Gæthe* (Germ. *Göthe*).

#### MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

•95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препинания) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (тóчка съ запятóю ;), the *colon* (двоетóчие :), the *full stop* or *period* (тóчка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресъкательный . . . .), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тирѣ —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скобки () ), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внѣсный знакъ or кавычки «») and the *paragraph* (красная строка). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepij*<sup>Division of prosody.</sup> (слогоударéние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихосложéние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

## ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (ударéние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words *водá*, *water*; *нéбо*, *the sky*; *свобóда*, *liberty*; *превосходíтельство*, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables *да*, *не*, *бо*, *ди*. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Place of the accent. 98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:

- 1) on the radical syllable: вѣдатъ, *to know*; вѣдомѣсть, *information*; невѣжество, *ignorance*; исповѣдатъ, *to confess*; увѣдомить, *to inform*; извѣстіе, *news*;
- 2) on the termination: вѣдунъ, *a sorcerer*; вѣстовѣй, *orderly*; извѣстить, *to notify*; заповѣдной, *interdicted*;
- 3) on the preposition: вывѣдатъ, *to explore*; заповѣдь, *commandment*; побѣсть, *a tale*; сбѣсть, *conscience*;
- 4) on the prefix in compound words: благовѣстить, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. чѣй отца твоего и мать твою, honour thy father and thy mother; друзъ мои, my friends; по берегу, *along the shore*; за моремъ, *beyond the sea*; онъ не весель, *he is not gay*; я не бралъ, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

## VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic versification* <sup>Tonic ve</sup> <sup>sification</sup>; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also <sup>Foot or</sup> <sup>metre.</sup> measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопá) or *metre* (размéръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, —: зимá, веснá.
2. The *chorcus* (хорéй) or *trochée* (трокéй), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, —: лéто, осень.
3. The *pyrrhic* (пиррхíй), formed of two unaccented syllbles, ..: such are the two first syllbles of безполéзный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochée.
4. The *dactyl* (дáктиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —..: пáлица, pá-достный.
5. The *amphibrach* (амфибрáхий), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ..—: причíна, цълýю.

6. The *anapæst* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last,  $\text{--} \text{--} \text{:}$  *человéкъ*, *временá*.

Denomina-  
tion of the  
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free* verses (вóльные стихи).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— $\text{--}$  | — $\text{--}$  |

Гéкторъ герóй съ колесници съ оружиемъ спрýнуль на зéмлю  
О'стрыя кóпья колéбля, потéкъ по рядамъ ополчéнý  
Въ бой распалáя Троинъ; и возможъ жестóкую сéчу;  
Всъ обратíлись отъ бýгства и стáли въ лицé Аргивáнамъ.

Гибдич.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрийские), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

˘-|˘- ˘-|˘-|˘-|˘-

Ужé бльдишьтъ день, скрыва́сь за горóю;  
Шумáщia стадá толпáться надъ рѣкой.

Жуковский.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говори́шь, что мúчусь надъ стихóмъ,  
Что не пишú егó, а сочиняю.

Князь Вáземский.

The *iambic* verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

Какóе торжество готовить дréвний Римъ?  
Кудá текутъ наро́да шумны вóдны?

Бáтюшковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ гóрести напráсно  
На Бóга рóпшешь, человéкъ!  
Внимáй, коль въ рéвности ужáсно  
Онъ къ Гову изъ тúчи рекъ.

Ломонóсовъ.

Ужé со тмóю иóщи  
Простéрлась тишинá;  
Выхóдить изъ-за рóши  
Печáльная луна.

Капнýстъ.

Играй, Адэль,  
Не знай печали!  
Хариты, Лель  
Тебя въчали.

Ал. Пушкинъ.

Ступай,  
Сзывай  
Съ лъсъвъ  
Всѣхъ псовъ  
На край  
Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихóжей на полу,  
Въ углу,  
Пустой мышокъ валялся.  
У сáмыхъ низкихъ слугъ  
Онъ на обтирку ногъ нерéдко помыкался;  
Какъ вдругъ  
Мышокъ нашъ въ честь попался,  
И весь червóщами набить:  
Въ окованномъ ларцѣ въ сохраниности лежить.  
Крылбев.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraiques of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — | — — | — — | — — |

Нѣть подруги нѣжной, нѣть прелестной Лиль!

Всё осиротѣло!

Плачь, Любовь и Дружба! плачь, Гименъ унылый!

Счастье улетѣло!

Батомшкоев.

Слáвься, Алексáндръ, Елисавéта,  
До вечéрней тíхихъ дней зарí;  
И сíніе въ страну полсвéта  
Съ высоты престóла распóстри.

*Бобрóвъ.*

Стóнетъ сíзый голубóчекъ,  
Стóнетъ онъ и день и ночь;  
Миленéкій его дружéчекъ  
Отлетéль надóлго прочь.

*Дмитриевъ.*

Всéхъ цвéтóчковъ бóль  
Рóзу я любíль;  
Ею тóлько въ пóль  
Взоръ мой веселиль.

*Дмитриевъ.*

Мы сердцáми  
И слезáми  
Мóлимъ васъ,  
Бóги гнéва  
И Эréва,  
Въ страшный часъ.

*Карамзíнъ.*

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

—oo —oo —oo | —oo

Бóже! Царя храни!  
Сильный, держáвный,  
Цárствуй на слáву намъ;  
Цárствуй на стрáхъ врагамъ;  
Царь правослáвный.  
Бóже! Царя храни!

*Жуковский.*

О домовítая лáсточка!  
Мáленька, сíзенька птичка!  
Грудь красиobýла, косáточка,  
Лéтняя гóстья, пýничка!

*Дерюсáвичъ.*

Рóза ль, ты рóзочка, рóза душистая,  
Всéмъ ты красáвица, рóза цвéтóкъ,  
Вéйся, плетíся съ лилéей и лáндышемъ,  
Вéйся, плетíся въ мой пышный вéнóкъ.

Баронъ Дельвигъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactylics, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

—uu|—uu|—uu—u|

Гдé ты, прекрасная, гдe обитáешь?  
Тамъ ли, гдe пéсни поётъ Филомéла,  
Крóткая нóчи пъвица,  
Сидя на мýртовой вéтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчёлка златáя,  
Что ты жужжíшь?  
Всё вкругъ летáя,  
Прóчь не летíшь.

Держáвинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

Въ часы пировáнья, при слáдостномъ пéніи струнъ оживлéнныхъ,  
Унынéе мрáчно на мигъ не оставило мýлаго гóста.  
Сидающа гóресть лежítъ глубокó въ его сéрдцѣ!  
Умóлкните, пéсни! да чистую радость раздéлять соглáсно.

Мéрзляковъ,

Владыка Морвéны

Жилъ въ дéдовскомъ зáмкѣ могúчий Ордáль.

Надъ озеромъ стéны

Зубчáтый зáмокъ съ холмá возвышáль.

Жуковский.

Въ то врёмя съ весною  
 Любовь насть ждала:  
 Въ то врёмя . . . . со мною  
 Подруга жила.

Мих. Дмитриев.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

Посмотри,  
 • И держи ты въ умѣ,  
 Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три  
 На продажу свинцъ въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The anapæstic line is sometimes used alternately with the amphibrachic; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрѣсно  
 Людѣй отъ непрѣды унѣть.  
 Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:  
 Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

Ты бѣгій, бѣгій, нашъ злодѣй отъ насть;  
 Не дадимъ тебѣ поругатися намъ.  
 Ты взгляній, взгляній на солдатъ свойкъ  
 Между рѣберъ ихъ ужъ трава растѣть.

Шулепниковъ.

102.—The *cæsura* (пресъчѣніе) is a rest which *Cæsura* divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the iambic verses of

six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ex. .

Изъ мрачныхъ надръ земныхъ | исходитъ бурный пламень;  
Кустарники дрожать, | о камень бьется камень.

Херасковъ.

И щить и мечь | бросаютъ съ знаменами;  
Вездѣ путь | покрыты ихъ костями.

Жуковский.

Здѣсь Гимѣнъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,  
Гасить у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

Батюшковъ.

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the cæsura should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the cæsura can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination  
of the  
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблю, любить ввѣкъ буду!	<i>fec. term.</i>
Кляните страсть мою,	<i>masc. term.</i>
Безжалостныя души,	<i>fec. term.</i>
Жестокія сердца!	<i>masc. term.</i>

Карамзинъ.

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (ри́тм), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g.

Кто бу́детъ прини́мать мой пе́пель отъ ко́ртá? }  
Кто бу́детъ безъ тे́бя, о ми́лая сестра́, } *masc. rhyme.*  
За гробомъ слéдовать въ одéждѣ погре́бальной, }  
И мýро излива́ть надъ у́рною пелáчной? } *fem. rhyme.*

*Бáтюшковъ.*

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бáлльные стихи). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (пáрные стихи), *alternate* (перестúпные) and *mixed* (смéшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre.

Всё вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весенний  
Памятникъ лобзается;  
Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣти геній  
Розу обрываєтъ.

*Батюшковъ.*

Разъ въ Крещенскій вечерокъ  
Дѣвушки гадали:  
За ворота башмачокъ,  
Снявъ съ ноги, бросали;  
Снѣгъ пололи; подъ окномъ  
Слышали; кормили  
Счетнымъ курицу зерномъ;  
Я ркай воскъ топили;  
Въ чашу съ чистою водой  
Клали перстень золотой,  
Серьги изумрудны;  
Разстилали бѣлый плать,  
И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ  
Пѣсенки подблѣдны.

*Жуковскій.*

Poetic  
licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вольности).

## CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

### EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-  
Exercise.  
p 18

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, whereof solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every Sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

*Karamzin.*

Exercises on *Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома.* Садъ хозяина и домъ *хозяйки.* Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола

p. 58. и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собаки; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчелъ, жуковъ и мухъ; блеяние барановъ и овцъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стеколь; каша безъ масла; съдла безъ стремя; зарядъ безъ пули; островъ и луга безъ деревьевъ; повара, кучера и работники безъ работы; дети безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней: статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвежата и львенки безъ шерсти; корабли безъ кобекъ; суда безъ вёселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пукъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотни форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужи дрёвности, и мужья жёнъ. Цветы садовъ, и цветы радуги. Листы бумаги, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубы у гребня. Колена Израилья, колени у человѣка, и колени растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Совѣтъ друзіямъ. Слава Богу. Го́ре врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай вѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать соошибѣтственно правиламъ

чёсти. Жить прилично состоянию. Законъ, даний какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мещанамъ. Противиться желаниямъ дѣтей, и воль родителей. Книги, перья и тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравиться мужчинамъ, и не нравиться женщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цветы братьямъ. Полезный отечеству; пріятный Богу и людямъ; верный Государю; любезный друзьямъ; милый дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познается по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италии, Германи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили дома, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читать басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посыпать братьевъ и сестрѣ, матерѣ и дочерѣ, отцѣвъ и сыновѣ. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покорилъ народъ. Пётръ разбилъ Швѣдовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просветилъ Россію. Россіяне побѣждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Швѣдовъ, Французовъ и Персіанъ. Дождь освѣжаетъ землю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, пріайди сюда! Войны, сражайтесь храбро! Боже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученикъ пишутъ грифелемъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Софьею и съ Любовью. Широгъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цветами; кадка съ водой; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гениемъ; галерея съ картинами. Города съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цветами и плодами; кивера съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водой; профессора съ учениками; письмо съ дѣнегами. Рисовать карандашемъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуется саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукой, крупою, винами, ливомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгаются волами, барабанами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Бáсни о быкé и барáнъ; объ осль и соловьé; о кузнéчикъ и муравьé; о дубъ и тростникъ; о лисицѣ и вóронѣ, о вóлкѣ и ягнёнкѣ. Сказки объ ангель-хранителе, объ Ивáнѣ и Мáрьѣ; повéстіи о Сéргіи пустыннике, о герóв и гéніи. Говорить объ игрáхъ, объ урóкахъ, о врéмени, о мéстѣ, объ обстóятельствахъ. Въ сочинéніи говорять много о чéсти и безчéстіи, о добродѣтели и порóкѣ, о храбрости и малодúши. Въ водé живутъ рыбы, лягушкы и слизни, а въ лесу живутъ львы, медвéди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свéтъ сóлнца озаряетъ зéмлю лучами. Цветá рóзы прйтны глазамъ. Друзъя человéчества дéлаютъ добро людямъ. Въ саду цветутъ рóзы съ шипами; ибо нéть рóзы безъ шиповъ. Дéти умываются водóю рвкі. Стакáнь съ водóю стойть на столѣ кóмнаты. Слéзы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слáва злодéевъ непроложительна; но имена благодéтелей сáются въ вéчности. Счастье на землé состоять въ спокóйствіи дúха и въ чистотѣ совéсти. Юноши любятъ пáніе соловьé, на берегу ручай, при свéтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бóга сéрдцемъ и душою. Муравы и бобры мóгутъ служить примéромъ человéку. Поездка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ библíотеку для чтéнія. Подай учителю тетрáдь со стихáми на слúчай прáздника. Нáдобно вставать утромъ, работать днёмъ, отдыхать вéчеромъ и спать иночью. Громъ пúшекъ и звонъ колоколóвъ возвéстили граждáнамъ о прибытии побéдителя враговъ отéчества.

Exercises on the adjectives. p. 83.

Пустóй кармáнъ; кармáнъ пустъ. Крéпкíй зáмокъ; зáмокъ крýпокъ. Вéрный слугá; слугá быль вéренъ. Мáгkíй воскъ; воскъ мáгокъ. Спокóйный сонъ; сонъ спокóенъ. Достóйный сынъ; сынъ достóинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиинъ. Совершéнnyй покóй; покóй будéть совершéнъ. Прозрачное стеклó; стеклó прозрачно. Дрéвнее предáніе; предáніе было дрéвне. Тéплое лéто; лéто будéть тепло. Тупóе перо; перо тупо. Вéтхая хýжина; хýжина ветхá. Синяя бумáга; бумáга синяя. Нóвые дома; дома нóвы. Богáтый семы; семы были богáты. Красная знаменá; знаменá будутъ красны.

Бéлая бумáга; бéльшая бумáга; сáмая бéлая бумáга. Нéвá быстра, а Вóлга быстрѣе. Молоко жéдко, а вода жéже. Глубокий ручéй; глубочайшая рвка. Дома высоки, а бáшни

выше. Хорошій чай; лу́чшій чай; сáмый лу́чшій чай. Собáки малы; ко́шки мéньше; но мы́ши малéйшія. Отéць мóлодъ; мать молóже; но сестра́ сáмая молодáя. Сéно дóрого, а со́ло́ма дорóже. Молокó слáдко; сáхаръ слáще; но мéдъ сáмый слáдкій.

Бы́ловáтая бума́га; буровáтая чернила; черновáтая вода́; краска синевáтa. Бу́ренькая корóвка; мáленькая лошáдка'; пýгенькая лошáдка; бéдне́нькая дéвочка; старчéкъ старénekъ: старúшка дóбренька. Пребéлая бума́га; бума́га бы́лёхонька; пресухáя дровá; дровá сухóшеньки.

Хозяинъ обши́рныхъ садóвъ, и хозяинка и́наго дóма. Стакáнъ хоро́шей воды и кра́снаго вина; цéлье горшкí свинáго сáла и ело́вой смолы. Дéлай добрó бéднымъ дéтямъ и дряхлымъ стари́камъ, и не ходí по чужíмъ по́лямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорúкаго; вотъ дворéцъ Графини Толстóи, а вотъ обши́рные сады молодыхъ Гра́фовъ Завадóвскихъ. Я дивíлся прíятному пéнню прошлогóдняго соловья. Чинитъ лебедíное перо тупымъ и́нжикомъ. Вотъ гусíныя перья, красные карандаши, тóлстыя тетра́ди, дубóвыя линéйки и большéе цíркули, а вотъ сукóнныя кафта́ны, тафтиныя платки, шéлковые чулки, пухóвые шля́пы, тóнкія полóтна и тончáшія кружевá. Люби непорóчные и́равы; читáи полéзныя кни́ги; чти стáрыхъ людéй; хвали дóбрыя дéла; берегí чéстнаго и вéрнаго слугу. Подари и́нову кни́гу сáмому прилéжному ученикú. Ты хвáлиши весéннюю погóду, я́сность лéтнихъ ночей, осению прохáду и зíмніе холода. Я уважáю слáвныхъ мужéй и знаменитыхъ полковóдцевъ дрéвнихъ времéнь. Большиe манéвры и́ны́я гóда бúдуть въ Кра́сномъ Сель и на Дúдергофской Гóрѣ.

Онъ вы́ѣхалъ изъ отцёва дóма, и дéлаетъ добро сéстрицой дóчери. Онъ прóдалъ жéнино имéніе братину сыну. Пóсъщáть Господни хráмы и Бóжіи цéркви. Повиновáться Господней вóль, и познавáть величество Бóжія и́мени. Пéрвая Рýсская Граммáтика бы́ла напíсана безсмéртнымъ Ломонóсовымъ, и Российская Истóрия Николáемъ Михáйловичемъ Карамзíнымъ. Сражéниа съ Францúзами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живáль въ Новъгóродѣ и въ Бы́лъбóрзѣ. Дерéвни Князéни Салтыковой лежáть подъ гóродомъ Кашинымъ.

Вотъ лісъя шуба, соболья шапка, штичье гнездо, заячий мехъ и слоновыи зубы. Пудъ оленяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ следамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсуждение о человѣческомъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онь торгуетъ рыбьими клѣемъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козьими шкурами и пѣтушьими грѣбнями.

Хвастунъ похожъ на сюю, украшенную павлиними перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ прѣхаль изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, но Петрово ещѣ узже. Дѣбрецкая старушка живѣть въ сыромъ дѣмѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царющими селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрѣвымъ ворогникомъ, и бобрѣвую шапку съ шѣлковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ Софийномъ переплѣтѣ. Гдѣ найдемъ мы примѣръ чистѣшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises on the numerals. Р. 97. У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, два щеки, два руки, два ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукахъ и десять пальцевъ на ногахъ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ высокосномъ году четыре времена, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ; пятьдесятъ два недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и обѣ сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копѣйки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лота; въ лотѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Две пуховые шляпы, три шелковые платки, четыре перочинные ножика, пять фарфоровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сіи два чёрные вороны, тѣ три белыя пера, мой четыре ковыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтей. Оба бѣдные сироты и обѣ несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровъ, четвѣро дѣтей, шестеро солдатъ, двѣнадцать часовъ, трои очки, пятеры ножницы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; второе сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человѣкъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человѣкѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатомъ. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осьмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двѣнадцатаго, а Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятидцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и произшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ сѣмьдесятъ третьму году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двенадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрѣжки, запряжённыя парою вороныхъ лошадей, или двумя вороными лошадьми; и карета, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестёркою рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежитъ отсюда въ тысячу вёрстъ, село во ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокѣ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осьмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублѣй) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятнадцати шестидесяти рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживѣтъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорокъ трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорокой копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысяч рублей въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорокой окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтряными мельницами. Я люблю разное обѣихъ сыновей и обѣихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ чѣтверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому мѣллюону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надо прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублѣй.

Каждому по сту рублѣй и по сороку копеекъ. Въ нѣкоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ кареты, а въ каждой каретѣ по три мужчины и по четыре женщины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублѣй и по сороку по пять копеекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семи очкóвъ. Каждая часть сочинéнія продаётся по полутору рубля серебрóмъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ пéрвые полдни онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часá по полуночи, или въ пять часóвъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послéдніе полгода тысяча восемьсотъ сорокъ четвёртаго гóда. Пéрвые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолжéніе пéрвыхъ получаса. За миою было полтораста тысячъ рублей годоваго дохóда.

*Exercises on the pronouns.* Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижáешь. Мы уважáемъ его, а её мы любимъ душéвно. У меня много дёнеръ, а у тебя нетъ ни копéйки. Заступись за него, и понадѣйся на неё. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобы она пришла ко мне. Безъ него, безъ неё и безъ васъ жизнь миа скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю все для нихъ. Мы уважáемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во миа увéренъ: я поговорю о тебé. Мне прйтно быть съ нею. Я не довѣрю себé, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережёмъ себá, а они себé вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твой сестра и его сынъ вмѣстъ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твой собака мénьше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помоши. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о свойхъ лятахъ. Пойдй къ моему столу, и подари дёнеръ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о свойхъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимáетесь своимъ урокомъ. Учение горько, но плоды его сладки. Твой садъ прекрасны; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видали ли эти собаку и этого кота, этихъ людей и тѣхъ дерёвьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нетъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нетъ серебра. Я слышала это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣла бное. Давно ли ты живёшь въ семь городъ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти пёрыя тупы; сий домъ каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Такіе глаза проницательны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы лёди.

Человѣкъ, котоrаго вы видите, очень умёнъ. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень прйтна. Я знаю дѣло, о котоrомъ вы говорите. Водá, котоrою я мбюсь, очень холодна. Берегись того, кто льстить тебé. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о забавахъ. Учитесь тому, чегó вы не знаете.

Вотъ такоё сукно, какоё я купилъ. Какоў быль военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вотъ другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моей судьбы. Служайся того, въ чьёмъ домѣ ты живъ. Вотъ книга, какихъ ма́ло, и случай, каковые рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу прійдёшь? Какими книгами занимашся, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которымъ начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видаль, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чими дѣтьми онъ гуляетъ. О чёмъ ты заботишься, и чѣмъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чѣмъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получай эти льнги? Сколько вѣрстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоится сіе сочиненіе? По скольку рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я напишу сю квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находять у васъ извиненіе. Онь всегда говорить о себѣ самому. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли её самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы все довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ однѣ женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обоего пола. Они разсыпаны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой птицѣ.

Нѣть никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у кого. Ты неешь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чемунибудь, и скажи это комунибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе несколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно покупалъ по нескольки сотъ душъ.

Оѣ сестры дурно говорять другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сіи дома лежать одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добрѣ, сколько я желаю. Ты желѣешь учиться. Exercises on the verbs. p. 166. Онь думаетъ, что знаѣть все науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дераемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мой соѣди питаютъ одинъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провиденіе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

многаго. Голубь воркуеть; горлица стонеть; собака лаеть; щенки брошуть; лягушки квакають; бороны каркають; львы рыкають; олень токуеть; куры кудахчуть; кошка мяучить; быки мычать; пчела жужжитъ; змия шипитъ; орлы трубятъ; соловый щебечутъ; овцы блеять; свиной хрюкаютъ; лисица визжитъ; осёль ревётъ; калкунъ клохчетъ; перепёлка вавакаетъ; петухъ кукурецаетъ; сорока скрекочетъ; попугай болтаетъ. Громъ гремитъ; вода кипитъ; дереви скрипятъ; ручий жужжатъ; огонь трещитъ; звёзды сверкаютъ; солнце светитъ; пчёлы роятся; алмазы блестятъ; сухие листья хрущатъ; ветеръ свистаєтъ; снегъ таетъ. Солнце озаряетъ землю своими лучами, греть и живить её. Земля обращается вокруг солнца. Вы напрасно горбуете.

Я гулялъ вчера по берегу реки, когда солнце садилось. Моя сестра сидела подъ деревомъ, которое качалось ветромъ. Вчера мы много работали, читали, писали и рисовали. Овцы мрутъ отъ стужи. Его мать давно умерла. Неприятели заперли его въ крѣпости. Этотъ человѣкъ ослѣпъ, и его жена оглохла. Мой деревья высохли и мой цветы завяли.

Москвѣ долго будеть красоваться во главѣ городовъ Русскихъ. Ты будешь играть, и я буду писать. Россійское государство будеть безпрерывно возвышаться, и всегда пріобрѣтѣтъ болѣе силы и славы. Великій государь никогда не умрѣтъ.

Дѣлай, что тебѣ говорятъ, и не думай упрямиться. Не теряй надежды, и уповай на Бога, Ступайте домой, и не толкуйте столько. Не трати времени, и не мучь жинотныхъ. Говорите всегда правду, и не спорьте о пустякахъ.

Соловей поётъ; лошадь ржётъ; волкъ вбѣтъ. Есть звѣри, которые спятъ всю зиму. Ты берёшь много на себѣ, и я не берусь за это дѣло. Зачемъ вы мните эту книгу? Онь живётъ въ Москвѣ, и сливаетъ богатымъ человѣкомъ. Пастухъ стрижётъ овёцъ; крестыне придуть лёнъ и ткуть холстъ. Онь хочеть спать, и вы хотите играть. Мой сосѣдъ берётъ меня, какъ роднаго сына, и не могъ со мною, разстаться. Неприятели сожгли многіе города; они увлеклись злобою и мщениемъ. Пастухъ пасъ овёцъ на лугу. Я пошлю за лекаремъ, и ты пришлешь мнѣ денегъ. Этотъ городъ цветётъ, и онъ долго будеть цвѣсти силою и богатствомъ. Я дамъ

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бері на себѣ тогó, чегó ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себѣ хорошенько.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы\* летаютъ, рыбы плѣваютъ, и чѣрви ползаютъ. Посмотрій, сюда идѣтъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видиши, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; онъ всегда такъ летаютъ. Сей морякъ долго плѣваль по Чёрному Морю. Что тамъ плывѣтъ на водѣ? Жёны Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несёшь въ этомъ мѣшкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ эта́тъ человѣкъ тащитъ. Видѣли тогдѣ, чегó не видѣли дотолѣ.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молния засверкала. Молния сверкнула, грянула сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Брать мой лёгъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко хранилъ и проснулся. Могу ли надѣяться, что лира мой тронетъ еще ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблистало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ сору мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прощаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новѣгоро́дѣ. Живучи въ Москвѣ, я тужа́лъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодыя лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, они научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошёлъ къ намъ въ эту мгну́ту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насть въ отчаяніи, и услышалъ бы наши стенанія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтѣ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Не было такого каменного сердца, которое не изливалось бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ эта́тъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякой выслужить ей съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блестательною храбростью. Особенно отличился онъ при взятии одной непріятельской баттареи. Онъ первый взобрался на брустверъ, убилъ непріятельского солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отли́чиями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семье, и будетъ рассказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Ту́рокъ и Французовъ, какъ бывалъ враговъ,

какъ терпѣль голодъ, страда́ль отъ ранъ, и утѣшался мыслю, что слѣжитъ своему Государю сердцемъ и душою. Уповай на меня.

Exercises on the participles. <sup>p. 176.</sup> Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающеся

дитя; собака, бросающа́ся на проходящихъ. Купецъ, получавшій товѣры изъ Іондона, продава́ль ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товѣры изъ Іондона, прода́лъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнию, ищетъ облегченія. Зажгій потушшую свѣчу, и вытри замѣршее стекло. Слава герою, спасшему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычащій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свой чувства и желанія.

Море, волнуемое вѣтрами, устраша́еть пловцѣвъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, стара́ется заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судбою и преслѣдуемому неудачами. Это снятное молоко, и вотъ тѣртый табакъ. Это заряженнное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются бѣтые гуси, смолёныя верёвки, откормленные пороссята и стриженные овцы.

Россія обита́ема многими народами. Добрые государи любими́и свойми пѣдданными, и уважаемы сосѣдями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твои будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бываю́тъ склоня́емы, а глаголы спрягаю́тъ. Сей великий полково́децъ буде́ть чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москвѣ была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

<sup>Exercises on adverbs and gerunds.</sup> Поди сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу́. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Егб нѣть дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера́ вѣчеромъ? Ты судиши умно,

<sup>p. 181.</sup> а братъ твой суди́ть умно. Я хожу́ шибко, а ты ходиши шибче. Вы говорите по-ру́сски чисто, а сестрица ва́ша ещѣ чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а черезъ годъ ещѣ дальше. Ты поѣшь хоро́шо, но она́ поѣть лу́чше. Я прошу́ васъ увѣдѣтельнѣе. Я благодарю васъ покори́тше.

Гуляя на берегу́ реки, я наслажда́юсь прохладою вѣсера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, стара́йтесь помочь имъ. Я васъ учу́, желая вамъ добра, и надѣюсь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умѣя сдѣлать чего нибудь, проси́ совѣта, не краси́я. Дѣлай добро, не бойся никого. Не должно вѣсть лёжа. Служа́ отечеству и умира́я за него, мы исполнимъ свой долгъ.

Получивъ письмо вѣшь, и узнавъ, чѣго вы желаете, я немѣдленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останыся дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувѣртъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришѣши домой, я сѣль писать. Женившись, онъ поѣхалъ въ дерѣвию. Просидѣвшъ часъ у него, я поѣхалъ домой; раздѣвшись и лѣгши, я скро уснѣль.

Безъ надѣжды нельзѧ жить въ свѣтѣ. Отъ рѣкѣ до лѣсу Exercises on the preposi-  
двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго tions. p. 185.  
блѣга. Между дѣмомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бѣга ради не унывай. Любовь къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дѣда. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь вѣду. Эта чѣловѣкъ при смрти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Сидѣтъ за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мойѣтъ въ Москвѣ, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орѣлъ сидѣтъ на дѣревѣ. Эта рѣмка разбилась на мѣлкія части. Я досадуюсь на брата моего за его лѣнность. Не забѣтъ о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголь стола. Вода течетъ съ кропли. Вотъ дерѣвья съ листьями, но безъ цветовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ коробу. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ пѣрваго по пятое числѣ Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своимъ братьямъ.

Мой дѣдъ родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь Exercises on the conjunc-  
ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Ежели вы не прѣдете, то tions. p. 188.  
я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъѣхать, или  
намѣревается остатся дома. Онъ забоится болѣе о братѣ  
нѣжѣ о сестрѣ. Прѣдѣть дѣлать добрѣ другимъ, чѣмъ самому  
получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ прїдѣтъ; пускай онъ  
уѣдѣтъ. Да солнце вѣсъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежише ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ  
лѣгче будеть для тебѣ учѣнѣе.

Зима прѣдна. Люди суть смртны. Новгородъ быль Exercises on the concord  
бога. Россія есть обширная импѣрія. Вѣла есть царыца of words.  
рѣкѣ Рѣсеки. Прѣдѣль мой, вы будете довѣльны. У насъ  
есть большіе запасы. У менѣ завтра будуть дѣнги. Ей  
Велічество (Императорица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великий Князь) былъ довѣленъ. Географія и Исторія суть

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москвѣ знаменита; городъ Москвѣ знаменитъ. Китай многолюденъ; государство Китай многолюдно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человѣкъ, чьими трудами пользуемся.

*Exercises on dependence of words.* Водѣ есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великий полковоцѣ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мой дѣдъ офицеръ; р. 200. мой дѣдъ былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорить, что комѣты были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь освѣжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Буря, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселеній. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѿхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебѣ хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ матерью.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ дѣньги славѣ, а воинъ славу дѣньгамъ. Молния предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти своему непрѣтелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебѣ. Быть чуду. Литъ горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человѣку не прилично обижать слабаго. Подражаніе Иисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣти и ненависть къ пороку.

Вижу глазами, осозаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Измайлъ былъ взятъ Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Этихъ офицеровъ все называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелить губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложью. Здѣсь дышать чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвование жизни за Государя и отечество. Онъ добрь сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надоѣно вставать, днѣмъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помиря моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искренняго друга вчера ѿхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума нерѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ спісокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печенье хлѣба. Я курить фунтъ чаю и саженъ дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ прошло по пустому. Русские взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не ѿмъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я ѿмъ хлѣба, но не пью воды. Я не получалъ ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достаинъ мнѣ дѣнегъ. Войны желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и бойшися труда. Бѣшка полна вина. Добрый человѣкъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинѣцъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ просить милостыни ради Христы. О тыхъ приятель посль работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣль горъ. Волки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранить присутствие духа при всѣхъ непріятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой реки. Церковь о пятнадцати главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своемъ отцѣ.

### Волшебница.

Одна вдовы имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицемъ и вѣромъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ея мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ: все отъ нихъ бѣгали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Все её любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра её ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ дѣмѣ, топить пѣчъ, мести горницы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдняжка плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и все то было напрасно, ибо ничемъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная девушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водой въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновенію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водой, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видѣть передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала девушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушку кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица сѣла передъ нею на колени, и осторожно поддерживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вижу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебе наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя видь старушки, чтобы тебе испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и воть, что я хочу для тебя сдѣлать: всякий разъ, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадет или прекрасный цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прости, другожок!» И волшебница изчезла.

Прекрасная девушка возвратилась домой. «Где ты такъ долго была?» спросила у неё съ сердцемъ мать. — «Что ты такъ долго дѣлала въ рощѣ?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замѣшалась!» отвѣчала бѣдняжка, и въ ту самую минуту съ прекрасныхъ губъ ей скатились две розы, две жемчужины и два большіе изумруды. — «Что я вижу?» воскликнула удивлённая мать. «Это цветы! Это драгоценные камни! Что съ тобою сдѣлалось!» — Красавица простодушно рассказала ей о своей встрѣчѣ съ волшебницей, а между темъ цветы, алмазы и жемчугъ такъ исыпалась съ губъ ей. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «зайдра пошли въ рощу старшую мою дочь, и съ нею то же будетъ.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдёшь за водою ты: возьми кувшинъ; но смотри же, если встрѣтишь у истоchnika старушку, дай ей напиться и приласкайся къ ней хорошенько.» Злая девчонка нахмурилась, съ досадою взяла кувшинъ; нехотя пошла въ рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидѣла, ужѣ у истоchnика. «Зачерпни мнѣ воды, мой милая!» сказала она девочкѣ: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не за тѣмъ пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старымъ бродягамъ. Напьёшься и безъ меня!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. Съ этихъ поръ, при каждомъ словѣ твоемъ, будешь выпадать у тебя изо рта или змѣя или лягушка.» Она изчезла, а злая девчонка побѣжала домой, разбивши съ досады кувшинъ свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидѣвъ ёё издалека. — «Нечего сказать!» отвѣчала дочь, и вдругъ выскочили изо рта ей две змѣи и две жабы! — «Что я вижу! какой страхъ!» закричала мать. «Но во всёмъ этомъ виновата твой сестрѣ! Я дамъ ей знать.» И она бросились бить мѣньшую дочь. •

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далѣко, и наконѣцъ потеряла дорожу. Но это было къ ей счастію. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это врѣмя въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сидя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою сдѣлалось? о чѣмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Боже мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала менѣ изъ дома.» Она говорила, а цветы и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ей розовыхъ губъ, и слезы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цветы, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣднѣйшка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ еще болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ей цветы и драгоценные камни. Отъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ей мужъ взошель на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ей? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дома; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голодомъ.







## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### FIRST PART

#### LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar . . . . .	1
Sounds or letters . . . . .	2
Alphabet . . . . .	2
Division of the letters . . . . .	6
Pronunciation of the letters . . . . .	7
Vowels . . . . .	7
Semi-vowels . . . . .	11
Consonants . . . . .	13
Syllables and words . . . . .	17
Tonic accent . . . . .	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i> . . . . .	18
Elements of speech . . . . .	22
Division of words . . . . .	23
Roots of words . . . . .	24
Inflections of words . . . . .	26
Metaplasm of words . . . . .	26
Permutation of letters . . . . .	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis . . . . .	28
Apocope and Syncope . . . . .	29
<b>THE SUBSTANTIVE</b> . . . . .	<b>29</b>
Division of substantives . . . . .	29
Properties of nouns . . . . .	30

	Page
Genders . . . . .	30
Aspects . . . . .	34
Numbers . . . . .	36
Cases . . . . .	37
Declension of substantives . . . . .	39
Regular substantives . . . . .	39
Rules of the declensions . . . . .	40
General rules . . . . .	41
Special rules . . . . .	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives . . . . .	43
First declension . . . . .	43
Second declension . . . . .	48
Third declension . . . . .	50
Irregular nouns . . . . .	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i> . . . . .	58
<b>THE ADJECTIVE</b> . . . . .	65
Division of the adjectives . . . . .	65
Qualifying adjectives . . . . .	65
Possessive adjectives . . . . .	65
Properties of adjectives . . . . .	67
Gender, number, case . . . . .	68
Apocope of the termination . . . . .	68
Degrees of signification . . . . .	69
Declension of adjectives . . . . .	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives . . . . .	76
First declension . . . . .	78
Second declension . . . . .	80
Third declension . . . . .	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i> . . . . .	83
<b>THE NUMERALS</b> . . . . .	88
Division of numerals . . . . .	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals . . . . .	89
Declension of the numerals . . . . .	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals . . . . .	92
Special rules of the numerals . . . . .	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i> . . . . .	97
<b>THE PRONOUN</b> . . . . .	102
Division of the pronouns . . . . .	102

	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns . . . . .	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i> . . . . .	107
<b>THE VERB</b> . . . . .	112
Division of verbs . . . . .	112
Inflections of the verb . . . . .	113
Tenses . . . . .	113
Aspects . . . . .	113
Moods . . . . .	116
Persons, numbers and genders . . . . .	117
Forms derived from the verb . . . . .	118
Conjugation . . . . .	118
Regular verbs . . . . .	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb . . . . .	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs .	125
First conjugation . . . . .	128
Second conjugation . . . . .	130
Third conjugation . . . . .	136
Irregular verbs . . . . .	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs . . . . .	138
Delineation of verbs . . . . .	142
Simple verbs . . . . .	143
Prepositional verbs . . . . .	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i> . . . . .	166
<b>THE PARTICIPLE</b> . . . . .	173
Division of the participles . . . . .	173
Active and neuter participles . . . . .	173
Passive participles . . . . .	174
Declension of the participles . . . . .	175
Passive verbs . . . . .	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i> . . . . .	176
<b>THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND</b> . . . . .	178
Division of the adverbs . . . . .	178
Formation of the adverbs . . . . .	179
Degrees of comparison . . . . .	180
Gerunds . . . . .	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i> . . . . .	181
<b>THE PREPOSITION</b> . . . . .	183

	Page
Division of the prepositions . . . . .	183
Government of the prepositions . . . . .	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i> . . . . .	185
THE CONJUNCTION . . . . .	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i> . . . . .	188
THE INTERJECTION . . . . .	188

## SECOND PART

### SYNTAX.

Division of syntax . . . . .	189
CONCORD OF WORDS . . . . .	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i> . . . . .	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS . . . . .	193
Nominative . . . . .	194
Vocative . . . . .	195
Accusative . . . . .	195
Dative . . . . .	196
Instrumental . . . . .	197
Genitive . . . . .	198
Prepositional . . . . .	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i> . . . . .	200
CONSTRUCTION . . . . .	210

## THIRD PART

### ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS . . . . .	212
Vowels . . . . .	212
Semi-vowels . . . . .	215
Consonants . . . . .	215
Doubling of consonants . . . . .	218
Capital letters . . . . .	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES . . . . .	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS . . . . .	220
Russian words . . . . .	220
Foreign words . . . . .	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS . . . . .	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION . . . . .	227

## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody . . . . .	229
<b>ORTHOEPY</b> . . . . .	<b>229</b>
Prosodical or tonic accent . . . . .	229
Place of the accent . . . . .	230
<b>VERSIFICATION</b> . . . . .	<b>231</b>
Tonic versification . . . . .	231
Foot or metre . . . . .	231
Denomination of the verses . . . . .	232
Cæsura . . . . .	237
Termination of the verses . . . . .	238
Rhyme . . . . .	239
Stanza or strophe . . . . .	239
Poetic licenses . . . . .	240
<b>SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES</b> . . . . .	<b>241</b>



LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN.

